

A NEW 1933

SPANISH GRAMMAR,

More perfect than any hitherto publish'd.

All the ERRORS of the former being
Corrected, and the RULES for Learning
that Language much improv'd.

To which is added, A 1933

VOCABULARY

Of the most necessary WORDS:

Also a COLLECTION of

PHRASES and DIALOGUES

Adapted to

FAMILIAR DISCOURSE

By Capt. JOHN STEVENS, Author
of the large SPANISH DICTIONARY.

The SECOND EDITION.

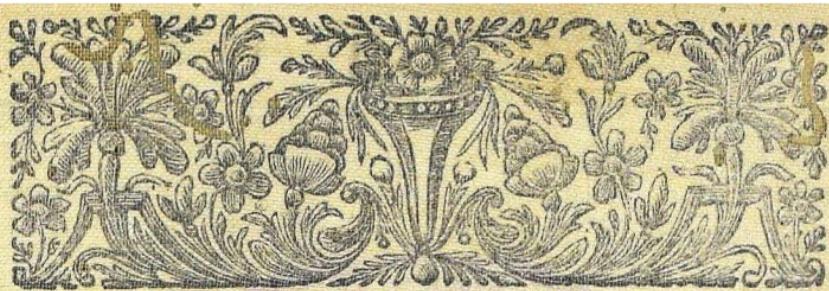
The whole Improved, Corrected, and Amended,
By SEBASTIAN PUCHOL, D. D.

LONDON:

Printed for T. MEIGHAN in Drury-Lane,
T. Cox at the Lamb under the Royal-Ex-
change, and J. Wood in Pater-noster-row.

M DCC XXXIX.

1739



Sigil de la Real Academia de la Historia
AL

Mui ilustre y noble Señor

Don GUILLEM STANHOPE,

Señor Barón de HARRINGTON,

Embaxadór que fue en la Corte de Espáña, Plenipotenciário en los Congressos de Sevil'a, y Soissons; y al presente uno de los Princ páles Secretários de Estado de su Magestad Británica, del Conséjo de su Mag^d. &c.

Exc^{mo}. Señor.

NO dexára en mi de ser animosidád temeraria, el ponér éste libro á los pies de V. Ex. si su buén índole y afabilidád no le quitássen el ser Offadía.

El Nombre de Stanhope es tan conocido en Espáña, de tantos años à ésta parte; y su mui ilustre y noble Prosápia, tan altamente respetada y aplaudida, que nunca cederá al olvido su Memoria: yá

DEDICATI

por las Múchas y continuadas Embaxadas, conque han ilustrado aquella Corte; yá por las heroicas hazañas, que, en tiempo de Guerra, han merecido los aplausos de la Európa tóda; ó yá por la tranquilidad, que han sugerido en vários Congréssos para el bien público. En tiempo de Páz, les ha venerado la Espáña como Nativos de aquél País, y en tiempo de Guerra les há considerado tan Galanes como Valerosos. En recíproca benevoléncia, siempre aquella familia há mostrado tal inclinación y Carño à los de aquella nación, que, paréce, le asiste una propensión innata à beneficiarles y protegerles.

'Esto es, loque esfuerza mi humildad à ofrecer à su Ex. éste teníssimo obsequio; pues V. E. há heredado, como que en compléxo, lo heróico y especiales prerogativas de la familia tóda: há seguido los pásos, continuado los progrésos, y adelantado la gloria de sus Antecessores. Hái muchos, que consagran sus libros à Príncipes y Proceres, ajenos del conocimiento de que tratan, dando por motivo la necesidad de su protección contra los Malévolos (como si con el libro no se comprásse la libertad de murmurár del): Mas cuerdos y menos Lisonjéros éran los Antiguos, que dedicaban los fuyos, ó à sus Amigos, ó algún Príncipe inteligente, à quién, por razón del argumento, se le debía la obra. Y revocando yo al uso moderno la práctica de los Antiguos, Nádie podrá negár mi acierto en la elección de V. E. pues elijo à Persona tan benemérita, que puéde juzgar y aprobar: luégo en vánlo solicitará yo à V. E. para la acceptacion, quando de justicia se le débe esta dedicatoria. Sé bien, que el tributárle elogios, ferá ofendér su Modestia: Porloque suplico, solo, elque V. E. se digne de recibir y patrocinár ésta obrilla, como à demostración de mi Afecto y Veneración. En caso, que V. E. hallare algo de su agrado

DEDICATION.

grado y mereciéle su aprobación, me quedará. Il
consuelo de decirle, lo que Horacio à su Mecenas :

Magnum hoc ego duco, quod placui tibi.

Y la obligación de rogár à Diós, le G^{de}. y prospére
por dilatados años : Assegurándole, que en tanto me
tendré por feliz, en quanto publicaré que fói, con el
debido rendimiento, de

V. Exc^a.

El mas humilde y Obediente servidór

Q. B. S. M.

SEBASTIAN PUCHOL, D. D.





THE P R E F A C E.

UPON a careful Examination of this Grammar, (altho' the best that is extant,) I found the Rules laid down so very deficient and incorrect, that I thought I could not do the Publick a greater Service, than by presenting them with one more perfect. This induced me to undertake the Correction of it; to lay down a new, modern, and approved Orthography and Etymology; and to add so many necessary Rules to it, that the Reader, who is acquainted with the former Edition, will hardly know that this is STEVEN'S GRAMMAR. I do not intend to undervalue what others have done of this Nature: What I can say without Presumption is, that I have consulted all former Grammars, and inserted in this what I have found well grounded: I have rectified Abundance of Mistakes, which other Authors have passed over, and corrected others laid down by them as established Rules; and I leave the Learned to Judge of the many Improvements made in this Edition.

The P R E F A C E.

The Rules for the true Pronuntiation are ~~as~~ clearly expressed as can be done in Writing. The Articles and Parts of Speech are explained in a Manner easy and intelligible to young Beginners. The Conjugation of Verbs (one of the most intricate Parts of the Castilian Language) is laid down in the most plain Manner, to each of which is added that of the Passive, Reciprocal, Impersonal, and other irregular Verbs. I have also inserted two Tables, by which the Learned will, at first view, see the Difference between the three Conjugations.

The Curious will herein find all that is requisite and necessary, to lead them into the perfect Knowledge of the Castilian (commonly called the Spanish Tongue) which has been preserved in those Provinces, in a greater Purity and Perfection, than in any other of the more distant ones from the Court: This was the Reason that induced King Don Alonzo the Wise to order that all publick Writings, &c. should be made in the Castilian Tongue. I have laid down some fixt Rules in the Rudiments, to avoid ambiguity in the Pronuntiation of the Letters B, V, &c. erroneously used before, even among the Spaniards. The Vocabulary, Familiar Phrases, and the Colloquies are carefully amended; and all the Words are accented to avoid Mistakes in the Pronunciation.

It was high Time (nay there was an absolute necessity) to make a new Edition of the Spanish Grammar: For all Languages alter by Time and Custom; and the Castilian has received so many Alterations, that no-body can pretend to teach it, or learn it in Perfection, as it is spoken at Court, and used by modern Authors, without some new Instructions. The q, (called

The P R E F A C E.

(called cedilla) which was so much in use before, is now left off, and the Reasons for it the Reader will find in my Observations on that Letter, and then is substituted in its Place. The y, which commonly passed as a Vowel, is now a Consonant in Composition. Some of the Spanish Words are softened, and others altered, as more conformable to the Latin; as instead of Coraçon we say Corazón: for vezes, dezir, hazér; véces, decir; hácér: instead of estoy, doy, Reyno; estói, dói, Réino: for dava, iva, devo, escrivo; dába; íba, débo, escribo: for Cavállo, Govierno; Cabállo, Gobiérno: for abuelo or aguelo; avuélo: hái for ay or hay: Ahí for aí or hai, &c. I have followed, in the Correction of this Grammar, the Dictionary lately published by the Royal Academy of Madrid, which is the only Standard for all those who aim at Speaking and Writing correctly and elegantly the Spanish Language.



A NEW



THE RUDIMENTS

A S there are many who study the CASTILIAN language, without understanding before-hand what Grammar is, and that every body may have certain rules for his guide, I think it may not be useless to make an epitome of it and its parts.

GRAMMAR is the art of speaking and writing properly. And is divided into four parts, *viz.*

ORTHOGRAPHY, or the method of true writing.

ETYMOLOGY, or the knowledge of the original words.

SYNTAX, or the manner of forming the words into sentences.

PROSODY, or the knowledge of the accent or quantity of the syllables, as to their being pronounced long or short.

2 The RUDIMENTS of
P A R T I.

Of ORTHOGRAPHY,

Which contains some very curious and necessary observations to learn the Castilian tongue in perfection.

C H A P. I.

roduced theirs. But there is no memorial of the former, and the Gothic ceased in the year 1091 by decree of the national council at Leon, in the reign of Don Alonso VI. in which it was appointed that no characters should be used besides that of the Roman: Ever since which time they have continued the Latin letters; with the addition of a few borrowed from the Greek, in order to own their debt for such words as they took from that language, and these are *ch*, *k*, *pb*, *tb*, *y*, correspondent to *χ*, *κ*, *ϙ*, *Ϛ*, and *υ*.

The Castilian alphabet consists of twenty-six letters, including the *b*: the twenty-three following are common to other languages.

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, K, L, M, N, O, P, Q,
R, S, T, U, X, Y, Z.

a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, k, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s,
t, u, x, y, z.

And

And the other three letters *ç*, *j*, *ñ*, for their different pronunciation are peculiar to the *Castilian* language.

Of the common, these five are vowels *A*, *E*, *I*, *O*, *U*, to which the *Y* is added for the Greek words, so called from their expressing a sound without the help of any other letter. The rest are consonants, so called from their having no sound alone, and are regularly divided into *mutes* and *semi-vowels*; or, as others say, into *natural* and *confus'd*: the *mutes* or *natural* are *B*, *C*, *D*, *G*, *K*, *P*, *Q*, *T*, *Z*, and the *semi-vowels* or *confused* are *F*, *H*, *L*, *M*, *N*, *R*, *S*, *X*, so called for their being pronounced with a vowel before and after it.

Of which *L*, *M*, *N*, *R*, *S*, are liquids: *ç*, *j*, *ñ*, *v*, and *y*, are likewise consonants in the *Spanish* language.

Of the pronunciation of the letters.

A Letter is nothing more (*in the sense we speak here*) than *a note of a peculiar sound, and an individual part of a syllable*.

Letters are (as some authors affirm) in comparison to the languages what notes are to Musick. If from the notes may be formed various and innumerable tones, whose sweet and pleasant harmony cherish, and with sounding eloquence persuades; so are the concerts of words infinite, which result from the letters, whose composition with an eloquent melody describes to us the thoughts, and brings the invisible to life: both as written, speak to the eyes, and as pronounced, to the hearing. And if nobody without the perfect knowledge of notes can boast of being a Musician; less can any one presume to know with delicacy a language without a full knowledge of the letters.

For which reason, and as in the order of nature, the simple is first, and then the compound, it appears proper to begin by the vowels, whose sound is so simple as to be formed only by opening the mouth.

Of the vowels.

A a

I S pronounced as in *English*, aw, as in the words *all, ball, call, ball*: without differing from the manner in which it is pronounced by other nations.

E e

Is pronounced the same as in the *Latin, Italian,* and *French* tongues, nay even the same as in the English in the words *to bless, to send*.

Tho' e be doubled it never loses its pronunciation, so that when there are two e e in a word, both are plainly and distinctly pronounced, as *créer*, to believe; *leér*, to read.

I. Y.

These letters are called *i Latin, and y Greek*: the former preserves it's natural pronunciation in composition, and is pronounced by all nations, as in these words, *visible, vision, terrible*: the latter has the same pronunciation; but when in composition is a consonant, and is pronounced as two i i, as *ayúda*, help; *ayúno*, a fast.

Of j called *i jóta*. See letter G.

O

Has the same pronunciation as in *Latin and English*, in these words *thróno*, throne; *obediente*, obedient.

U.

U. V.

The Spanish language has two *u*'s as well as the Latin ; *u* vowel called by the Spaniards an open or square *u* ; and *v* consonant called *v* close, or *de Corazoncillo*, which always goes before the vowels, and is never joined to a consonant, nor ends any word. *U* vowel is pronounced as double *oo* in English, and these words *Cupido* a Cupid, *Cura* a Curate or a Cure, are pronounced as if they were written thus *Coopido*, *coora* ; because the pronunciation of the words book *libro*, cook *cozinero*, is exactly the same as that of the *u* vowel in Spanish.

V consonant is pronounced by the Spaniards in the same manner as the *u* vowel ; tho' there are some authors who pretend to say, that it's pronunciation is a sound between that of *b* and *u*, but I see no manner of ground for this exception.

Observations upon the vowels.

A.

THIS letter has often the masculine accent, as *amará*, he will love ; *bará*, he will do it ; and the feminine, as *amára*, when I might love, in the last syllable. There are four diphthongs formed of this vowel when it goes before other vowels, as we shall shew hereafter.

A when by itself, stands for a preposition which denotes the dative case, as *dóí la preferéncia à Pédro*, I give the preference to Peter ; it governs also the accusative, as *yo ámo à Dios*, I loye God ; denotes the part or place where one goes, as *vii à Róma*, I go to Rome, it also precedes the accusative when before an infinitive governed by another verb, as *vámos à cenár*,

cenár, let us go to supper ; *à passeár*, to walk ; *à jugár*, to play.

When before the adverbs or adverbial moods it denotes the manner in which an action is executed, as *à sabiéndas*, knowingly ; *à tréco*, by changing ; rather purposelly, *à brázo partido*, upon equal terms : *à* denotes likewise when a thing is to be done, as *à las doce del día*, at noon.

It is often an interjection, as *à señor fuláno*, ho there such a one ; *à señor Pédro*, ho there Peter.

It is taken for *con*, with, as *castíguese el oficial à pena capital*, let the officer be punished with a capital punishment.

For *bácia*, towards, as *volvió la cabéza à tal parte*, he turned his head towards such a place.

For *pára*, for, as *condúce à éste fin*, it is proper for this end.

For *por*, by, as *à fuerza ganó la ciudad*, by force he gained the city.

For *según*, according, as *à la móda de Francia*, according to the French fashion.

For *si*, if, as *à saber esto*, if I knew this—, upon knowing of this.

For *sino*, if not, unless, as *à no venir à tiempo*, if he should not come in time, &c.

For *en*, in, as *à vista de tal procedér que quiere que bága?* upon sight of such proceeding what will you have me to do ?

And tho' there are many authors who are of opinion, that *à* stands for the third person singular of the present tense indicative of the verb *havér*, to have, saying *aquéл á*, I say that then it is to be written with an *b* thus *aquéл há*, observing the same in all the tenses and moods ; for *havér* is derived from the Latin verb *habere*, and regard being had to this there will happen no mistake or equivocation.

There are other authors who assert, that *à* stands for *hái*, there is, which is absolutely false ; for in the speeches which denote time, as *à un año que vine à Lóndres*,

Londres, it is a year since I came to London, it must be written with *b* thus *bá* abbreviated, or by the figure Apocope, because then it is the third person singular of the present tense indicative of the verb *hacer*, to do, and is the same as *hace un año que vine à Londres*, according to the rule.

Apocope demit finem, quem dat Paragoge.

But of these we shall speak more at large in another place.

E.

E either is masculine, as in the last syllable of *amaré*, I shall love; *aprenderé*, I will learn; *enseñé*, I have taught; *oiré*, I shall hear, &c. or feminine, as *quando amáre*, when I shall love; *quando olvidáre*, when I shall forget; and it is so because the accent is not acute in these last examples.

Of the *è*, when before other vowels, may be formed four diphthongs.

E is sometimes used as a first person of the verb *haver*, but then it must be written with *b*, saying *yo he comprado un anillo de oro*, I have bought a gold ring.

It is often a conjunction, and is used instead of *y*, when the following word begins with *i* vowel, as *los Holandeses è Ingleses*, the Dutch and the English *España è Italia*, Spain and Italy.

Poets often take the liberty to add the letter *e* at the end of some words using the figure Paragoge, saying *amore* for *amor*, love, and this they do for the sake of the rhyme.

E is sometimes an interjection, but then *b* must be added to it, as *bé*, *que dices?* ha! what do you say? *bé*, *que quierés?* ha! what you will have? it stands likewise for an adverb, as *bé*, *la mugér*, see! the woman.

I. Y.

The *Latin i* stands for a vowel in the *Spanish language*, and the *y* for a consonant ; but when a strong aspiration is required in the pronunciation, then *j* serves as a consonant, as *yá*, already ; *justo*, just.

When the accent is laid on the *i* as *leí*, *vi*, then it has a masculine pronunciation, and when not, a feminine one.

There are four diphthongs also formed from this vowel.

When *y* is by itself in a speech, it is generally a conjunction copulative, and sometimes suspensive, as *Juán y Pedro*, *y býuen*, *y córren*, *y peléan*, John and Peter, fly, run, and fight : But it must be observed, that when the following word begins with *i*, then by Euphonia è must be made use of instead of *y*, as *los Espanóles è Italianos*, *Francéses è Ingléses*, the Spaniards and the Italian, the French and the English.

I or *y* are sometimes put instead of *abi*, there, but as this use is merely voluntary it must be never used.

O.

This letter is also pronounced sometimes with a masculine accent, as *amó*, he loved ; *respondió*, he answered.

Four diphthongs are formed of this letter, when it precedes other vowels.

When the *o* is by itself in a speech, it is often a conjunction disjunctive, as *ò sábio*, *ò ignorante*, *ò brávo*, *ò covarde*, *ba de venir*, *con mígo*, let him be wise, or ignorant, or brave, or a coward, he must come with me.

It is likewise an interjection, as *ò maldad !* *ò dolor !* O wickedness ! O pain ! but of this we shall speak more largely in another place.

As an adverb, as *ò si yo fuéra rico*, O that I were rich.

U is

U.

U is sometimes pronounced with a masculine accent; as *tú*, *sú*, thou, his; of it are likewise made four diphthongs.

When after a *g*, *u* is joined to *e* or *i*, then *u* loses its pronunciation; and these words, *Guedéja*, a lock of hair; *guía* a guide, are pronounced as in the English words of giddy, Guinea, or as in the French words *guerre*, war; *guerir*, to cure. *Aguéro*, an omen; *verguénza*, shame, &c. are excepted.

When it is by itself in a speech, then it is a conjunction, or interjection, instead of *o*, when the word following begins with an *o*, as *impedimento* à *obstáculo*, impediment or obstacle.

Of the pronunciation of the Consonants.

B. b.

THIS letter is pronounced as in other languages, closing the lips, and as if it had an *e* after it, as in the English word *Bay*.

As to the letter *b*, its difference, and similitude of pronunciation with the letter *v*, we must refer the reader to the 2d chapter as to its proper place.

C, ç, Z.

C when before the letters *e i* is pronounced softer than *s*, as *cédro*, a cedar tree; *ciélo*, heaven: when before the vowels *a, o, u*, is pronounced as *k*, as *cára*, the face; *comér*, to eat; *cuérda*, a cord or rope.

When *b* follows the letter *c*, it is pronounced as in the English cheese, *quéso*; child, *níño níña*; thus are *chánza*, a jest; *chocoláte*, chocolate; *chico*, little, small; *múcho*, much: these words excepted *charidád*, charity; *chóro*, a choir; *archángel*, an Archangel, &c. which are

are derived from the *Latin cbaritas, chorus, angelus,* for *c* then is pronounced as *k*.

Upon the *Cedilla* formed with a small dash under it, I think it convenient to observe; first, that as by a resolution newly taken by the members of the Royal Academy at *Madrid*, the *ç* had been only invented to supply the defect of combination of *ce*, *ci*, in the three vowels *a, o, u*, in order to pronounce *çv, ço, çu*, instead of *ca, co, cu*; and this having taken place, and with the same softness as the *z*; the *ç* is reputed at present as superfluous; and the reason is, because *ç*, in the opinion of several authors, is not a different letter from the *z*, but the same differently formed, this being the reason why many authors have used both promiscuously, for their pronunciation are very much alike in these words, *çapatér, ozapatéro*, a shoe-maker; *cáça, caza*, hunting, &c. Besides, because *ç* is not found in the mother tongues, and the *z* is; further the *z* is a general letter in the beginning, middle, and ending of any word, which cannot be said of the letter *ç*, for which reason, it often cannot be used in the middle of a word, and in the end never; no body having written as yet *almirantáçgo*, admiralty; *balláçgo*, a reward for a thing lost; *mereçco*, I deserve; *padeçco*, I do suffer; *desliç*, a slipping; *luç*, light; *paz*, peace; *veloz*, swift. Wherefore I am of opinion that *ç* is superfluous in the *Spanish* language, and as such it's use must be avoided, placing the *z* in it's stead in every word where *ç* used to be.

But as *ç* is found in most of the *Spanish* authors, I think it proper to acquaint the curious, that it's pronunciation is the same as that of *c* when before the vowels *e i*; because, as has been said, *ç* was invented to supply the combination in the vowels, *a, o, u*. And tho' a certain rule might be given to keep both the *ç* and the *z* in the said language, which is, to use the *ç* when a consonant precedes, as *alabânça*, a praise; *enseñança*, instruction, teaching;

and to use it when a vowel goes before, and in the beginning and end of words, as *alteza*, higness; *razón*, reason; *zelo*, zeal; *luz*, light, &c. but as the foregoing opinion is better grounded, I think it more right to take away the *ſ* and to use the *z*, as the modern authors do, whom I follow. *Z* is pronounced as the *English* pronounce the double *ſſ*.

D. d.

D has the same sound in *Spanish*, as in the *Latin* and other languages. And although there are several authors who are of opinion that *d* is not to be pronounced when at the end of a word, yet I am of a contrary opinion, and say that it always is to be pronounced if it is written, with this difference only, that when it ends a word, its sound is softer, laying the accent on the preceding vowel, as *amistad*, friendship; *bondad*, goodness, &c.

F f.

Does not differ in its sound from that of the *Latin*, or of other languages; but it must be observed, that the *Spaniards* never use *ff* in their writings, as will be said afterwards, and if some do double them it is by way of a voluntary affectation. A certain author takes notice, that the *Spaniards* confound *f* with *ph*, or, to speak more proper, they use *f* instead of *ph*; I don't doubt but that in every nation there are ignorant people, but those who are skilled in Orthography ought to conform to the manner in which words are written in the original.

G. g. J. X.

G is only guttural before the vowels *e*, *i*, but *j* and *x* are always spirited, or guttural letters in the whole combination of the vowels, because in the same

same manner is pronounced *ja, je, ji, jo, ju*, as *nu-*
xe, &c. *x* is not guttural in some words derived
from the *Latin*, as *eximír*, to exempt; *exámen*, examination,
&c. as it will be said in the 2d chapter, and
when it goes before a consonant, as *excedér*, to exceed;
excitár, to excite; *excluir*, to exclude; *excreménito*,
excrement, &c.

G before the vowels *a, o, u*, is not aspired or
guttural, and is pronounced as in other languages,
as *gállo*, a cock; *gólpe*, a blow; *güsto*, taste, pleasure.
I cannot agree with some authors, who say, that
when *g* comes before *n* it is sunk in the pronunciation,
because the men of learning in *Spain* generally
pronounce it, as in *Ignácio*, Ignatius; *ignorár*, to be
ignorant; *ignóto*, unknown; *magnánimo*, magnani-
mous; *magnífico*, magnificent, &c.

H.

Jórdan, Martinianus, Tominque, in his Elench.
Elem. P. II. Art. III. Littleton in his *Latin*
Dictionary lett. *H*, and other authors are of
opinion that *H* (called by St Jerom an extensive
vowel) is a letter for the following reasons.

First, a Letter is nothing else than *a note of a pecu-*
- liar sound, and a single part of a syllable;* *h* *is the*
- same:* therefore the *h* is a letter.

Secondly, The *h* comes originally from the *Hebrew*
and *Greek* tongues; it was a letter with them: why
then should it not be the same in the living lan-
guages? &c.

The *Spanish* authors place the *h* among the semi-
vowels, because before and after it has a vowel in its
pronunciation. See the abovesaid authors. But
as the public has received the *h* with *Priscianus* as a
note of aspiration and not as a letter, we must con-
form to it whether with reason or without it. *H* is
generally pronounced so gently, that in many words
it can scarce be perceived, as *hómbré*, a man; *humilde*,
humble;

humble ; but when *ue* follows *b*, then *bu* is pronounced as the English *w*; *búerto*, a garden; *buéshed*, an host or guest ; *buésso*, a bone : like *wértá*, *wésped*, *wéffo*.

After *c* is pronounced *s* in English, *church*, *much*, *iglesia*, *múcho*. Although some authors observe, that the Spaniards very rarely use the *b* after *p* and *t*, I say, that the Spanish tongue does not allow them the liberty to do it, and thus the learned must conform themselves to the etymology of words, saying *Thomás*, Thomas ; *Theología*, Theology or Divinity ; *Philosophía*, Philosophy.

K.

The Spaniards make use of this letter only in conformity to the etymology of the words derived from other languages, as *Kalendário*, a Kalendar ; *Kalendas*, Kalends, the first day of the month, *Kyrie eleison*, &c. Greek ; and in proper names of cities, towns, &c. at *Kelmo*, *Kenard*, *Kunigunda*, &c. Saxon.

L. l.

Besides the single *l*, there is a double *ll* in Spanish language as in the Latin, but differently pronounced : the single one is pronounced as in other languages, but the double *ll* as in the Italian *gl* in the words *Figli*, *Moglie*, &c. or as the double *ll* in French in the words *coquille*, *fille*, &c. which sounds as if an *i* was after the first *l*, as of *lláve*, a key ; *llovér*, to rain ; *callár*, to be silent, read *lliáve*, *lliovér*, *calliár*. *L* is never doubled in the end of words.

It must be observed, that all words that have a doule *l* in the Latin, are written in Spanish with a single one.

M.

M is pronounced as in other languages, as *máno*, a hand ; *camino*, a way ; *mádre*, mother, &c. in what manner 'tis to be doubled, or when it is to be kept single

N.

There are two *n*'s in the Spanish language, one which is common to all languages, and is pronounced alike with them; another proper and peculiar to the Spanish, written thus *ñ*, which is equivalent to two *n n*, and is called *n con tilde*, and is pronounced as *gn* in *Italian* and *French*, or, as if it had an *i* after *n*, as in these words, *áño*, a year; *níño*, a child; *montaña*, a mountain; saying thus, *agno* or *anio*, *migno* or *ninio*, &c.

P.

There is nothing to be observed in the letter *p*, but that its pronunciation is the same as in *Latin*, as *pán*, bread; *Pédro*, Peter.

Pb are used as *f*, and pronounced in the same manner; but that in writing *f* ought to be used for *pb* is an insupportable error: because with *pb* and not with *f* are to be written the following words, *Philósoþo*, a Philosopher; *Physico*, a Physician; *Physiología*, Philosophy, &c.

The *Latin p* is often changed into *b*, as of *recipere*, *recebír*, to receive; but of this we shall speak hereafter.

Q.

U always follows this letter as in other languages, and is pronounced in the same manner. When *ui* follows after *q*, then it is pronounced as if there was a *k* instead of *qu*, saying *quinto*, *kinto*, fifth, *quince*, *kince*, fifteen; but when it follows *ua* or *ue*, the *u* is pronounced tho' not strong, as *question*, a question; *consequéncia*, a consequence; *quátro*, four, &c. the following are excepted, *que*, let him touch or ring;

ring ; *repique*, let him ring out ; *líquido*, liquid ; *que*, that ; *querér*, to be willing ; *quién*, who ; which are pronounced as if they were written with *k*.

R

No way differs in it's sound from the *Latin* and *English* ; but it must be observed, that at the beginning of words it is pronounced stronger than at the middle and end, because the initial *r* is equal to two *r r*, which always are pronounced with vehemence.

S.

S simple, as well as compound, is pronounced as in *Latin* : *cum amassem santos*, *como amásse los santos*, when I could love the saints ; *o altíssimo Dios*, O most high God : from whence it may be inferred, that all the preterimperfects of the optative, and the superlatives, are written and accented as in the *Latin*.

S in the *Spanish* is doubled in words derived from the *Latin*, of which we shall give sufficient notice in its place, but never is doubled at the end of words ; and when they begin in the *Latin* with *s* to which follows a consonant as *e*, *m*, *p*, *t*, then is added an *e*, as from *scholasticus* say *escholástico* ; *scribere*, *escribir* ; *smaragdus*, *esmeralda* ; *spina*, *espina* ; *spiritus*, *espíritu*.

T.

This letter is pronounced as in *Latin*, in the combination of all the vowels, as *Tácito*, *Tatío*, *tenaz*, &c. still or quiet, the sense of feeling, tenacious, in the middle of several words *t* is changed into *c*, and especially in words ending in *tia* and *tio*, as from *beneficentia* say *beneficéncia*, from *essentia*, *esséncia* ; *justitia*, *justicia*, &c. beneficence, essence, justice.

There

There is no double *t* in the Spanish language.

When the original words have *tb*, they are to be written in the same manner in the Spanish; as *Cátabra*, *Católico*, *Mathéo*, *Theología*, pronouncing the *tb* as a single *t*.

X.

This is a guttural letter. Vid. Let. *G*.

I do only observe here, that all the Spanish words that begin with *x* are Arabick, except the following that come from the Greek, *Xanthénia*, a precious stone like amber in its colour; *Xánto*, a precious stone of a very yellow colour; *Xeniolo*, a small gift; *Xenodóchio*, an hospice, or an inn for strangers; *Xenón*, an habitation, a dwelling-place, a lodging; *Xenopárochos*, officers appointed to provide for the Ambassadors; *Xyrotbéca*, the case wherein the Barbers put their razors and scissars; *Xysto*, a gallery, a summer-house, or an open place to take the air about a garden.

Y. Vid. Let. *I*.

Z. Vid. Let. *C*.

C H A P. II.

Of the letters when in composition.

THE only and sure rule to reduce the Castilian language in perfection, is to write it as it is spoke, and really pronounced; it is by this only that it is distinguished, and exceeds all other languages, not excepting the Latin; I have said the Latin, because that language joins the diphthongs, pronouncing only one letter, when they are wrote with two as *Cánum* is pronounced *Celum*: but the Castilian

Castilian pronounces its diphthongs in such a manner, that without losing a letter it preserves the sound of both vowels in one syllable, as *alcáide*, *aire*, *réy*, *liy*, *buéy*, &c. this being agreeable to the sense which the Antients gave of the word *diphthong*, defining it thus: *Diphthongus est duarum in una syllaba vocalium sonus perceptus*, a diphthong is the distinct sound of two vowels in one syllable; for which reason I am of opinion, that the Antients pronounced *Latin* in the same manner that the *Spanish* is now pronounced; and if it was not foreign to my present purpose, I would prove clearly the time when and how the *Latin* pronunciation has been corrupted, and by what means the *synecresis* in the diphthongs was introduced, but as this suffices for the present, I shall proceed in my design.

In order to form the Orthography, it is necessary to observe the modifications by which time has smoothed the roughness of words, and reduced them to the modern stile and manner of discourse: But as there are many, who manage the *Castilian* tongue in proportion to their genius, confounding letters together in their pronunciation, and using the consonants at their pleasure; to avoid such abuse it is proper to know,

That the springs from whence flow such variety and confusion in the Orthography are the following. First, the similitude of the pronunciation of some letters, whose use is so uncertain, that they are often mixed, and by the meer pronunciation it is difficult to distinguish their proper use: such are the *B* and *V* consonant, the *C* and the *Z* in the proper combinations, and in those of the *C*, in the two vowels *e* and *i*, the *G*, *J*, and *X* in the two vowels *e*, *i*, the *J* and *X* in their entire combinations; the *C* and the *Q*, and the *G* and *H*, in the combinations where the *u* interposes. Secondly, the use of the double consonants, which are commonly found in compound words, as *acceſſión*, *immortál*, *annotár*,

18. The RUDIMENTS of
arreglár, *dissimulár*, &c. Thirdly, the use of many consonants which come together in various words, as *assumpto*, *sancidád*, *demonstración*, *redempción*, &c. This being supposed.

I say, first, that the *B* ought not to be pronounced and written instead of the *V*, nor the *V* be confounded with the *B*; since every one knows that they are different letters, and therefore it is absolutely necessary that their sound should be likewise different. To surmount this difficulty, regard must be had to the original from whence proceed the words in which these letters are found, because if they are derived from a word written with a *B*, as *Baculus*, *Beatus*, *Beneficium*, *bibere*, *bonus*, &c. they must be written with a *B*; and if from a word written with a *V*, they must be wrote so; as *Vácuo*, *valér*, *váno*, *vapór*, *vendér*, *venir*, *vida*, &c. which are derived from the Latin *vacuus*, *valere*, *vapor*, *vendere*, *venire*, *vita*.

For which reason all the preterimperfects of the indicative mood must be wrote with *B*, and not with *V*, as is usual, saying, *amába*, *cantába*, *bablába*, *orába*, because they come from the Latin *amabam*, *cantabam*, *loquebar*, *orabam*.

It must be observed likewise, that when in the original of a word there is a *P*, then the *B* must be used and not the *V*, because from *caput*, *concipere*, *lupus*, *sapiens*, &c. comes *cabéza*, *concebír*, *lóbo*, *sábio*.

Before the letters *L* and *R*, the *B* must always be put and not the *V*, saying *amáble*, *dáble*, *dóble*, *báblar*, *abrír*, *brávo*, *Hómbre*, *Póbre*.

Therefore that barbarous distinction ought to be avoided which ignorance has introduced, viz. that there must not be two *BB's* or two *VV's* in one word; because, if they are in the root they ought to be used, as in *Bárba*, *Bebér*, *Bárbaro*, *vivacidád*, *vivír*, *viviénte*, *volvér*, &c.

And when the original of words is doubtful, I am of opinion that we ought to use the *B*, and not the *V*, the pronunciation of the first being more agreeable to our manner of speaking than that of the second.

I say, 2dly, that the *f* called *cedilla*, is now superfluous in the *Spanish* tongue, and therefore the *Z* ought to be used in its stead, in all words whatsoever, as was said in chap. i. Lett. C.

But it ought to be taken notice of, that the words ending in *Z* which are derived from the *Latin*, ought to change the *Z* into *C* in the plural, because it is so found in the original, and thus *feliz*, *luz*, *paz*, *véz*, *vóz*, make in the plural *felices*, *lúces*, *páces*, *véces*, *vóces*.

Hitherto has been written *bazér*, *dezir*, but these verbs being derived from *facere* and *dicere*, now the *Z* is changed into *C*, conformable to the original, and now we say *bacér*, *decir*, observing the same rule in all their derivatives.

I say, 3dly, that *G* being guttural only before the *e* and *i*, it ought to be used only in the primitives and derivatives, such are *afligír*, *cogér*, *colegír*, *elegír*, *protegír*, *regír*, &c. writing *aflige*, *coge*, *colige*, *elige*, *protége*, *ríge*, without being extended to the derivatives of *j* and *x*.

When the infinitives in *gér* or *gír* change *ér* or *ír* into *a* or *o* as in the present, then the *G* is changed into *j*, that the true pronunciation of the infinitive may be preserved; and thus from *fingír* say *finjo*, *finja*, from *Regír*, *Ríja*, &c.

All words which in their original have *g*, *i*, or *l*, are written with *j* and not with *x*, as from *longe* say *léjos* from *Tagus*, *Tájo*; from *tegula*, *téja*; *jactantia*, *jaclánzia*; *jaspis*, *jáspe*; *jurare*, *jurár*; *justitia*, *justicia*; *juvenis*, *jóven*; from *confilium*, *conféjo*; *Filius*, *Hijo*; *melior*, *méjor*, in all the combination of the vowels; and when the infinitives end in *jar*, the *j* must be kept in all the tenses without exception.

In these words *Magestád*, *Mugér*, *Tráge*, &c. common use has prevailed in keeping the *g* instead of the *j*.

If the words have *x* in their original, as *Texer*, *exémplo*, *execución*, *perpléxo*, *vexiga*, &c. it would appear ridiculous to write them with *j*, and not with *x*; and it must be likewise observed, that when the words have the letter *s* in their original, as *tasa*, *dexár*, *xabón*, *xémé*, *xúgo*, &c. derived from *capsa*, *deserere*, *sapo*, *semipes*, *succus*, are to be written always with *x* and not with *j*; and the reason of it is, because the *s* has the sound somewhat like the *x*, and as the *Spaniards* do take the guttural pronunciation from the *Arabians*, and they pronounce the double *ss* as *x*, it cannot be absurd to change *s* into *x*.

Nouns ending in *x*, as *Bóx*, *Baláx*, *Relóx*, &c. keep the *x* in the plural; as well as all the verbs, which have *x* in the infinitive mood are to keep it in all the tenses, as from *baxár*, *dexár*, &c. say *báxo*, *baxába*, *Baxé*, &c.

Q is frequently in vulgar writings changed into *C*, but the true rule is to be guided by the original *Latin*: otherwise the derivation is obscured, and the pronunciation corrupted; from *C* are formed *cuájo*, *cuénta*, *cúerda*, &c. and from *Q* *quál*, *queſtión*, *quátro*, &c.

It is an impropriety, that many fall into of using *u* and *i* vowels instead of *y* and *v* consonants: but this irregularity is cautiously avoided by all correct writers, and exploded by the *Spanish Academy*; having established the letter *y* to be always a consonant in the *Spanish* words, and the accent is always laid on the annexed vowel, as *ayúda*, help, *ayúno*, a fast; *arróyo*, a rivulet, or a brook. It must be likewise avoided to put the *y* immediately before or after a consonant, or at the end of a verb or word, except the following *Ley*, *Réy*, *Buéy*, &c.

The Spaniards, to retain the softness of the sound of the *Latin* consonant *j*, for want of an exact equivalent, change it into *y* consonant, as in *adjuvare*, *jejunare*, *jacere*, which the Spaniards make *ayudár*, *ayunár*, *yacér*: and in conformity to the Greek, in words borrowed from that language, they preserve it as a vowel, Σύμβολον, *Musíeion*, Ἀξυμός, *Mártir*. *Symbolo*, *Mystério*, *ázymo*, *Mártyr*. So likewise in the third conjugation of verbs, as *argúyo*, *argúyes*, *argúye*, I dispute, &c. but in the imperfect say thus: *argúia*, &c. the accent being to be put on the vowels and never on consonants, the same is the first person of the preterpect, as *arguí*, I disputed, &c. the Spaniards likewise say at present, *dói*, I give; *estói*, I am; *bói*, to day, &c.

C H A P. III.

Of the use of letters doubled.

E and **O** are often doubled in *Spanish*, to come the nearer to the radical pronunciation, as *Acreedór*, *Creér*, *Leér*, *Cooperár*, *Loór*: in which both the vowels are pronounced distinctly. And it is on the contrary, wrong in some, who superfluously add *e* in words derived from the *Latin*, as in *Fee*, *Veer*, instead of *Fé*, *Vér*.

As to consonants, the variety is great, but to avoid all affectation, and speak properly it is to be observed, that *C* is never to be doubled before the vowels *A*, *O*, *U*, or before consonants, and we therefore write *Acaécer*, *Acomodár*, *Ocásio*, *Ocasión*, *Acusár*, *Acumulár*, *Aclamár*, &c. But before the vowels *E* and *I*, *C* is doubled in such words as are derived from the *Latin*, and had them originally, as *Accelerár*, *Accéssio*, *Accénto*, *Occidénte*, except the following words *Acepiár* and *Sucedér*.

because altho' in their original they have two *t c*, they are not specified in the pronunciation by the Spaniards.

Latin words terminating in *atio*, change the *t* into *C*, as *Acción*, *Cocción*, *Dicción*, *Lección*, *Producción*. And if either of these two *C*'s were omitted, the derivation would be the less evident.

M and not *N* is always to be made use of before *B*, *M*, *P*, as *Ambiente*, *immortal*, *império*.

Words compounded of the Latin prepositions *In* and *Con*, follow the Latin rule of turning *In* into *Im*, and *Con* into *Com*, as *Immaculado*, *Immediato*, *Immemorial*, *Immortal*, &c. *Commensurar*, *Commovér*, *Commutár*, &c. In all which words the *M* is doubled, tho' in several other common words one *M* is lost, as *Comercio*, *Común*, *comunión*, &c. Some change *Im* into *Em*, as *Emmascarado*, *emma-grecér*, *Emmudecér*, &c.

N is likewise doubled in several words compounded with *An*, *En*, *In*, *Con*, as *Annexión*, *Annotár*, *Gonnatural*, *Connexión*, *Ennegrecér*, *Ennoblecer*, *Innáto*, *Innocente*, *Innovár*, &c. except *Anular*, *Anunciár*, *Anillo*, &c.

The letter *R* is doubled in the words that have a strong pronunciation in the middle; as *Abórro*, *Bórra*, *Errór*, *Guérra*, *Pérro*, &c. Those words that have one *r* in the middle are pronounced softly, as *ára*, an altar; *aréna*, sand; *íra*, wrath. There is no word in the Spanish language that begins or ends with two *rr*, but the initial *R* has always a strong sound, as *rábia*, rage; *razón*, reason; *rector*; *reñir*, to quarrel, &c. it must be observed, that when any consonant precedes the *R*, then *R* is never doubled, and it would look but barbarous to write these words with two *rr*, *bónra*, honour; *bonrío*, honourable; *enriquecer*, to grow rich, &c. because the preceding consonant makes the pronunciation strong, so that the *r* is only to be doubled when between two vowels, as *tierra*, earth; *errór*, an error.

S is to be doubled in the words that have two *ff* in their original, as *assár*, to roast; *cessár*, to cease; *esséncia*, essence; *necesidád*, necessity; the same is to be observed in the second preterimperfect of the subjunctive mood, as *amásse*, I might love; *enseñásse*, I might teach; *buviésse*, I might have: in all the superlatives, as *amantíssimo*, most loving; *beatíssimo*, most holy, most happy; *doctíssimo*, most learned; and in adverbs superlatives, as *doctíssimamente*, wisely; so are the words *accésto*, access; *congrésto*, congress; *excesso*, excess; *progrésto*, progress; and all the compounds of simple words that begin with *s*, as of *saltár*, to jump, comes *assaltár*, to assault; of *sentír*, to be sensible, or to feel, comes *assentír*, to assent, of *susto*, fright, comes *assustár*, to frighten.

The two *ll*, which in Spanish have a peculiar pronunciation, are doubled before the vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, when in Latin *c*, *f*, *p*, &c. precedes *l*, as *llámo*, plain; *llánto*, crying, grief; *lláve*, a key; *lláma*, flame; *lleno*, full; *llorár*, to cry; *llovér*, to rain; *lluvia*, rain; as it will be said at large in the treating of the formation of the Spanish words from the Latin, which will be put at the end of this Grammar.

The said consonants only are to be doubled in the Spanish tongue, because no body now pronounces two *bb*, two *dd*, two *ff*, two *gg*, two Latin *ll*, two *pp*, two *tt*, nor double *w*. This is the method newly taken of the Royal Academy of Madrid, and this is that which the modern authors follow.

C H A P. IV.

Of the rules that are to be observed upon the concurrence of divers consonants.

FROM two to four are the consonants, which occur together between two vowels, of which there is some diversity in writing, which varies from the manner in which they are pronounced, and are *BST, BSTR, CT, CTR, MPC, MPT, NCT, NSC, NSCR, NSP, NST, NSTR, SC, XC, XCL, XPL, XPR, XQ, XT, XTR*; to understand which observe the following rules.

Rule I. The letters *BST* and *BSTR* are to be pronounced in all the words in which they occur, according to their original, as *absténér*, to abstain; *abstinéncia*, abstinence; *obstáculo*, obstacle; *substituir*, to substitute; *abstráber*, to make an abstract; *abstrácto*, an abstract; because they are all distinctly pronounced in the Spanish.

Rule II. *CT*, and *CTR*, are also to be pronounced and written as in the original, as *dócto*, learned; *doctór*, doctor; *récto*, right; *doctrine*; *pléctro*, a quill, used to play upon the strings of a harp; and this without any exception, otherwise it would appear an affectation.

Rule III. In the words in which concur *MPC* and *MPT* the letter *P* is lost, because it is not really pronounced in *assumpción*, assumption; *exempción*, exemption; *redempción*, redemptor, promptitud, &c. so that they are to be written thus *assumpción*, &c.

I cannot pass over an observation which occurs to me here, and is that the gentleman of the Academy change *MP* into *N*, being of opinion that the said words are to be pronounced thus *ajunción*, *redención*: for which resolution I cannot see nor find any other foundation,

foundation, than the mere affectation of pronouncing *M* as *N* (an abuse which I observed when at *Madrid*) confounding in it not only the *Spanish* but even the pronunciation of the *Latin* tongue: I say, that I observed many to pronounce the words of Transubstantiation thus: *boc est enim corpus meum*, instead of saying with distinction and clearness, *boc est enim corpus meum*. I can't but be much surprised that an academic body, and such as that of the Royal Academy of *Madrid* composed of persons of such learning and eminency, had taken no notice of the like abuse, and to give to the *M* the pronunciation as they ought in the combination of all the vowels, there being no reason to make the least alteration in it.

Rule IV. When *nēt* occur together in *Latin*, all the letters are often preserved in *Spanish* in writing, but the *c* is hardly, if at all pronounced in speaking, as *sáncto*, *sanctidád*, *distínto*, *púncto*, &c. write *sánto*, *santiidád*, &c.

NSC and *NSCR* are to be pronounced in the words where they are found, as *transcendentál*, *conscripto*, *inscripto*, this word *consciéncia* excepted, in which the *s* is not specified.

NSP and *NST* are retained in the *Spanish*, as *conspiración*, *transparente*, *transposición*, *transportár*, *transplantár*, *constár*, *constáncia*, *constitución*, *insti-tución*, &c. the use of the letters *NSTR* must be kept in the words *constrenír*, *construir*, *construcción*, *demonstráble*, *demonstración*, *instruir*, *instrucción*, *ménstruo*, *mónstruo*, &c. which otherwise happens in *mostrar*, *mostrador*, *mostréncio*, and their derivations in which *n* is omitted.

N. B. It is to be observed by the by, that the *n* is lost in these words *Traſteár*, *Traſladár*, *Traſládo*, *Traſlucir*, *Traſnocabár*, *Traſpalar*, *Traſpáſſo*, *Traſtrocár*, for the reason of being so admitted: but is preserved in the following *Transferir*, *Transfiguración*, *Transgreción*,

26. *The RUDIMENT S* of
Trasgredíón, Translación, Transmigración, Transtular,
Transformár, Transubstanciación, Transversál.

Rule V. The two consonants *S C* are to be retained in those words, in which the vowels *a ór u* follows them, as *escálá, escáma, escóta, escuéla,*
escória, Pescádo, Pescúezo: and although the *s* is not pronounced in the words *apacentár, aadecár,*
conciéncia, ciéncia, conocér, crecér, florecér, paó yet it is retained in *ascendér, ascendéncia, ascen-*
dénte, adolescéncia, condescendér, descendér, desceñir,
aquiescéncia, disceptación, discernir, disciplina, discí-
pulo, miscelánea.

Rule VI. *X C*, when between two vowels, are to be pronounced if they are so in the original, as *excélfso, éxcelénte, excídio, excommunión, excúsa, ex-*
cusár, &c. without exception. The like is to be observed in the concurrence of *X C L* and *X C R*, as *exclamár, excluir, excreménto, &c.* as likewise when after *x* follow *p* alone, *pl*, or *pr*, as *experién-*
cia, exposición, explanár, explicár, explorár, expri-
mir. And lastly, when *q* or *t* follow *x* their original is to be attended to, as *exquisítio, extendér,*
exterioridád, extinguir; extrahér, extrémo, extrangéro,
extraordinário, &c.

C H A P. V.

Of the Diphthongs.

TH E concurrence of two vowels, which compose but one syllable, is so frequent in the Spanish tongue, that the like is hardly to be found in any other. For tho' the vowels are but five, yet they admit twenty combinations; to which *Anthony de*

at *Nebrixa*, in his treatise of the Spanish Orthography, gives the name of diphthongs; *Valéra, Sandoval*, on the Rudiments of the Grammar, and several other authors are of the same opinion, tho' *Renfgo* in his poetical treatise attributes the joining of the two vowels in one syllable to the figure Syneresis. But as it is said in the 2d chapter, a diphthong is a perceptible sound of the two vowels in one syllable, and as in the following examples, the combination of the vowels make only one syllable in the Spanish tongue, they are admitted as diphthongs, and both vowels pronounced with some distinction, and a perceptible sound, viz.

In *ae*, as *acaecimiento*, accident; *albaes*, a sort of bills of the court of justice.

In *ai*, as *aire*, air; *alcáide*, a governor of a castle.

In *ao*, as *chaos*, a confusion; *daos*, do ye give, or give ye.

In *au*, as *causa*, cause; *cautela*, caution.

In *ea*, as *beatitud*, blessedness, holiness; *fea* from *fér*, to be, pref. optative.

In *ei* or *ey*, as *péine*, a comb; *reino*, a kingdom; *léy*, the law; *réy*, king.

In *eo*, as *Geometría*, Geometry; *beodéz*, drunkenness.

In *eu*, as *déuda*, a debt; *féudo*, a fief.

In *ia*, as *liadura*, a binding; *súzia* or *súzia*, a foul dirty thing.

In *ie*, as *Ciélo*, Heaven; *miédo*, fear.

In *io*, as *súcio*, adj. dirty, foul; *dió*, he gave.

In *iu*, as *tiudad*, a city; *viudo*, a widower.

In *oa*, as *lóa*, praise; *loáble*, praise-worthy.

In *oi*, as *dói*, I give; *bói*, this day; *sói*, I am.

In *oe*, as *béroe*, an hero; *roedura*, a gnawing.

In *ou*, as *Coutinho*, the surname of a family, or a shed in a park; *Móura*, a town, or a surname of a family.

In *ua*, as *quál*, which ; *cuájo*, rennet to make cheese.

In *ui*, as *buéno*, good ; *fuégo*, fire.

In *ui*, as *búitre*, a vulture ; *cuidádo*, care.

In *uo*, as *água*, I water, or mix water to wine ;
&c. *mútuo*, mutual.

But it must be observed, that not always the two vowels tho' joined together compose one syllable or a diphthong : because when the accent is put on the last, then they form two vowels, *cáe*, *bói*, *rói*, *mútuo* are monosyllables, and the same vowels in *caér*, *oí*, *raér*, *mutuó* make two syllables.

It must be noted also, that in the concurrence of those vowels, the *i* is always the Latin one, and not *y* ; and so it would be a notorious error to make use of the *y* in these words, writing *áyre*, *búytre*, *réyno*, *toysón*, when they are to be written thus *áire*, *búitre*, &c. because the *i* does not strike as the *y* on another vowel : except from this rule all the nouns terminated in *y* which in plural is made consonant, *réyes*, *léyes*, *buéyes*.

Of Triphthongs.

A Triphthong is the sounding of three vowels put together in one syllable, and are five in Spanish, viz.

In *iai*, as *decíais*, ye did say ; *bebíais*, ye were drinking.

In *iao*, as *avíaos*, make ye ready ; *precíaos*, let ye be valued.

In *iei*, as *enviciéis*, that you may corrupt ; *senten-cíeis*, that you may give sentence.

In *uai*, as *agúais*, ye put water into the liquor ; *gúai*, a lass.

In *uei*, as *juguéis*, that ye may play ; *buitre* for *buitre*, a vulture.

There are some authors who add another diphthong of *iue*, but in this they must be deceived, because the *i* or *u* in the nouns where *iue* is found, are consonants, as *Arroyuelo*, a little brook; *vive*, live thou.

C H A P. VI.

Of the Accents, &c.

ACCE N T S are tones in speaking, of which there are two sorts in *Spanish*, the *Grave* and *Acute*. *Grave* is that which descends obliquely from the left to the right thus , and is only used in the *Spanish* language on the four vowels *à*, *è*, *ò*, *ù*, when each is separate, and makes a perfect sense by itself. *Acute* is that which descends from the right to the left thus , and serves to prolong, make acute and strong the pronunciation, as *arnés*, armour; *amó*, he loved; *amará*, he will love; and it is also used to denote the quantity of the syllable.

But the most common use of the acute is to shew upon what syllable the strength of the pronunciation lies, for some words quite alter their signification according to the placing of the accent; as *cántara*, a sort of measure or pitcher; *cantára*, I would sing; *cantará*, he will sing; *libro*, a book; *libró*, he delivered, discharged, or gave a bill. When two or three consonants follow a vowel, there is no necessity to mark the accent upon it, their pronunciation being long by nature: the words whose consonants are mute or liquid are excepted, as *árbitro*, an arbitrator; *cáthedra*, a chair in which a professor teaches

teaches any science; *lúgubre*, mournful; the same is to be observed in the words called *esdrúxulos*, dactyles; as *águila*, an eagle; *música*, musick; *máximo*, greatest; which have the accent in the antepenultima. From whence is inferred, how erroneous is the opinion of those who make use of the Grave accent instead of the Acute, without understanding the sense of these words; because the accent Grave never makes a syllable long, but depresses and moderates the pronunciation.

To clear these things, and that it may be known where the accent might be laid on the Spanish words, I insert here the following rules.

R U L E I.

All Spanish words are derived from the Latin, have their accent on the same syllable as in the Latin words, when in the ablative case of the singular, (because, as I intend to say hereafter, the Spanish words are formed from the ablative singular of the Latin words) except when they retain the Latin nominative, as *fénix*, *régimen*, *sál*, &c. viz.

Latin.	Spanish.	English.
<i>Aquila</i> ,	<i>Aquila</i> ,	an Eagle.
<i>Amicus</i> ,	<i>Amigo</i> ,	a Friend.
<i>Baculum</i> ,	<i>Baculo</i> ,	a Staff.
<i>Clericus</i> ,	<i>Clérigo</i> ,	a Clergyman.
<i>Limes</i> ,	<i>Límite</i> ,	a Limit, or Bound.
<i>Pontifex</i> ,	<i>Pontífice</i> ,	a Pontiff, the Pope.
<i>Prudens</i> ,	<i>Prudente</i> ,	Prudent.
<i>Spiritus</i> ,	<i>Espíritu</i> ,	a Spirit.
<i>Terminus</i> ,	<i>Término</i> ,	a Term, or Limit.
<i>Vapor</i> ,	<i>Vapór</i> ,	a Vapor.

All the superlatives in *íssimo*, and *íssima*, have their accent in the antepenultima in Latin, as *aman-tíssimo-ma*.

tíssimo-ma, most loved; *castíssimo-ma*, most chaste; *beatíssimo-ma*, most holy, &c. add to these *ínfimo*, lowest, meanest, *íntimo*, intimate; *máximo*, greatest; *mínimo*, the least; *óptimo*, best; *próximo*, nearest neighbour; *último*, utmost, last, &c.

Rule II. Of the penultima syllable.

ALL words ending in *ia*, which denote some office, quality, passions of mind, place, or an aggregation of several things, have their accent on the penultima, as

<i>Alcaldía</i> , the office of a magistrate.	<i>Hospedería</i> , a place to entertain strangers in, &c.
<i>Alegria</i> , mirth, &c.	<i>Panadería</i> , a baker's shop.
<i>Clericía</i> , the clergy.	<i>Mejoría</i> , growing better.
<i>Especería</i> , a grocer's shop.	<i>Menoría</i> , minority.
<i>Enfermería</i> , an apartment for the sick.	<i>Señoría</i> , lordship.
<i>Librería</i> , a library.	
<i>Herrería</i> , a smith's shop.	

Of this kind are the words that have any of these vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, before another vowel in the penultima, as

<i>Albacéa</i> , an executor of a will.	<i>Grangéo</i> , gain, purchase, &c.
<i>Aldéa</i> , a village.	<i>Livréa</i> , livery.
<i>Bilbáo</i> , Bilboa.	<i>Lóa</i> , praise.
<i>Boléo</i> , the flight of a ball.	<i>Pica</i> , a soldier's pike, or a fish so called.
<i>Corréa</i> , a leather strap.	<i>Regodéo</i> , merry-making, &c.
<i>Corréo</i> , a post-mail.	
<i>Floréo</i> , a flourish.	

Except

Except *área*, an area ; *frámea*, a dart ; *foráneo*, belonging to the court of judicature ; *idóneo*, apt ; *incorpóreo*, incorporeal ; *mónstruo*, a monster, &c. which have the accent in antepenultima.

To this rule belong, all the words which carry the diphthongs in the penultima, as

Amáine, let him strike sail ; *báile*, a ball, *náipes*, playing cards ; *apláuso*, applause, &c. without exception.

The diminutives do likewise belong to this rule, as *ashíco*, *ashillo*, a little ass ; *boníco*, *bonito*, somewhat pretty, &c.

Rule III. Of the last syllable.

AL L nouns ending in *d*, *i*, *l*, *n*, *r*, *s*, *x*, *z*, have their accent on the last syllable, as those in

B. *Abád*, an Abbot ; *beldád*, beauty ; except *áspid*, an asp ; *huésped*, an host, a landlord.

I. *Albelí*, a clove-gilliflower-violet, *bocací*, *buckram*, &c. except *cási*, almost.

L. *animál*, *caracól*, a snail ; *generál*, except *ágil*, nimble, active ; *ángel*, angel ; *apóstol*, apostle, *cónsul*, consul ; *fácil*, easy ; *defícil*, difficult, &c.

N. *Afán*, labour, weariness ; *almidón*, starch ; except *crímen*, crime ; *exámen*, examination ; *imágen*, an image ; *jóven*, youth ; *márgen*, margin ; *órden*, order ; and other Latin words.

R. *Amór*, love ; *mugér*, a woman ; except *acíbar*, aloes ; *alcázar*, a castle, palace ; *almíbar*, sugar, boiled to a consistence, *ánsar*, a goose, &c.

S. *Ambagrís*, ambergreese ; *anís*, anniseed ; except *ántes*, rather ; *árlos*, shrubs ; *agátas*, on all four like a cat ; *à sabiendas*, knowingly, designedly ; *de brúces*, with the mouth downwards ; *entánces*, then, &c.

X. *Almoradúx*, the sweet marjoram ; *bálix*, a precious stone, &c. without exception.

Z. *Arcadúz*, aqueduct ; *Albornóz*, a sort of upper garment used by the Moors, &c. except *Alférez*, an ensign, &c.

All adverbs of place have their accent on the last syllable, as *acá*, hither ; *acullá*, yonder ; *allá*, thither ; *allé*, there ; *dó*, where ; *adó*, to what place ; *dedó*, from whence ; *aquí*, here, &c. and the following words : *albalá*, a sort of writing ; *Alcalá*, a name of a city in Spain, &c.

As the accent will be put upon the verb through all their tenses and moods, according to order in the conjugations, it will be needless to speak of them here.

C H A P. VII.

Of the manner of Pointing.

THE want of distinctions in clauses makes writing very imperfect, and to put them in an improper place, causes such equivocation in the sense, that this sense either is not understood, or at least is confounded. For which reason, and for the proper division of words, and clauses of periods and speeches ; it must be known, that there are eight signs, notes, or particles, used to this purpose.

1. *Comma*, *subdistinction*, *encise*, or a stroke formed thus (,) and so called to denote the half suspension, or pause, which denotes the expectation of something else to follow ; it serves likewise distinctly

distinctly to separate one clause from another, as *Felizidad es de un Reino tener un Príncipe sabio, que abráze lo bueno, y evite lo malo, haciendo justicia a todos*, it is a happiness to a kingdom to have a wise Prince, that embraces the good, and shuns evil, doing justice to every body.

2. A full stop formed thus (.) serves to denote that the period is quite formed, and that the speech is perfectly concluded: as *nadie se alabe, hasta que acábe*. Let no body praise himself, till he gets what he is about. *Albricias madre, que pregónan a mi padre*, give me something mother for my good news, for they are crying my father; said of people that mistake good news for bad, or rejoice in other's misfortunes.

3. Comma and a point thus (;) formed; (called by the Greeks an imperfect Colon, or Semicolon) is used to denote the implication and contradiction of things in the speech, or that they differ, as *los Padres son dignos de reverencia; Pero Dios de adoración*, Fathers deserve a reverence or respect; but God worship. *Pedro es sabio; pero su soberbia le desfuece*. Peter is a wise man; but his pride dishonours him.

4. Two points (called by the Greeks a perfect Colon) marked thus (:) serve to denote that the sense is not perfectly expressed in the speech, and that there is something wanting to perfect it: as *no hacer mal alguno es inocencia; no hacer mal a otro es justicia*, to do no evil is innocence: but justice to wrong no body. *La injuria si es verdád, tómala por advertencia; si es mentira, por crédito*, the injury if it is true, take it as a warning if false, for reputation and credit.

5. Note of Interrogation formed thus (?) denotes that something is asked or questioned: as *a donde vás?* where you are going? &c.

6. A note of Admiration thus (!) express the affection of mind and surprise caused by a sudden

news or consideration of something : as *Cielos!*
O Heaven! o bondad divina! O divine goodness!
tiempos! O times! *o vicios!* O vices! *o costumbres!* O customs! *o depravados siglos!* O corrupted age!

7. A Parenthesis thus () serves to separate a clause, without which the speech may have a perfect sense, to the end that it may be more plain, and to avoid confusion : as *el ministro sabio (que juntamente es desinteresado) es digno de toda alabanza*, a wise minister (who is altogether disinterested) is worthy of every body's praise.

8. Dieresis thus (^) is a Greek word (called by the Printers Crema, and signifies a severing or division) and serves to separate two vowels which might be joined in one syllable, and to note that both are to be pronounced plainly and with distinction. Anciently this mark was put upon the *u*, and *i* vowels, when before another vowel ; because there was no difference made in writing between the *i* and *u*, to shew when they ought to be vowels and when consonants ; now this division is to be put on the *u* : as *eloquente*, eloquent ; *frequencia*, frequency. And this only in the words where *u* is pronounced plainly and openly ; so that there is no need of a Dieresis in these *guerra*, war ; *guia*, guide ; *guinda*, a common cherry ; *quince*, fifteen.

To these add the note of Division or stroke figured thus (-) which is put at the end of a line, when the word is divided or cut, that it may be known that it is not finished : as in these (carefully dividing each syllable as children in spelling) *á-nimo*, *áni-mo*, courage, mind ; it cannot be divided thus : *án-im-o*, nor thus *anim-o* : in the words where two *ss*, *rr*, &c. are found, then the first consonant is pronounced with the preceding vowel, and the second with the following, and so *accidente*, accident ; and

boníssimo, the best, the most pretty or better are to be divided thus *ac-cidente* or *acciden-te*, *bonis-simo*.

Apostrophe is a stroke put over some letters to denote that another letter, which ought to be there, is left out, and lost by the figure *Synaléphe* of the following vowel: as *d'el* of him, *del'água*, of water; *qu'éra*, which was; *s'omítē*, it is omitted. Which manner is much used in the English, and French languages; and tho' in old Spanish books it is often observed, yet common use has left it off in the Spanish language, as an insignificant thing, which often confounds; so that by joining the letters are single words formed, saying *del*, *estátro*, the other; *estótro*, this other; or writing the two *ee* or *eo* for better intelligence, thus *de el*, *éste ótro*, éste ótro, *que éra*, se ofende, &c.

Of the use of capital letters.

W^HE^TH capital letters are to begin any writing, paragraph, period, or speech, after a final point; all the proper names, as well of persons, provinces, kingdoms, districts, cities, towns, villages, mountains, rivers, fountains, &c. as the surnames, renowns of authority or fame; those of dignities, titles, honourable employments, and other names of distinction, as King, Prince, &c. and altho' capital letters should be used at the beginning of each verse; yet the Spaniards are not exact in this point, for they only begin the verses of their heroic and grand Poems with capital letters, being careless in other species of poetry.

PART II.

Of ETYMOLOGY.

GREAT is the difference between the motherly or dead tongues, and the modern or living ones: because what the first of its firmness or itability will not allow the liberty of inventing or changing a word, case, nor tense, without the risk of committing a barbarism or solecism; the latter, being in the arbitrary power of the living, is nourished, either by adding some words, perfecting those in use, or forgetting those which in it's stuttering age were used. To this was likewise subject the *Latin* tongue, till it was cultivated by *Cicero*, *Plautus*, *Virgil*, &c. it sprang up in time of *Janus* and *Saturnus*, in whose language the priests of *Mars* wrote those verses called by their name *Salii*, which are kept in reverence or respect of the age, which shews the unpolished infancy of that language: it increased in time of *Latius*, from whence was derived the *Latin*, when the twelve law tables were written in *Latin*; and was perfect in the flourishing age of the *Romans*: but as soon as their empire finished, the language fell with it, degenerating in such a manner, that at present is looked on as half corrupted, there being so many barbarisms in its Latinity.

For which like reason, many are the words which the tyrant Use has introduced in the *Spanish* language, whose root has no other trench than the good pleasure of men; and other words are so much degenerated from their original, that almost den their birth: as *desabuciar*, to desert (is called Physician's verb, and is only used to express when

a man is given over by the Physicians) from the Latin *fauzia*, but has quite opposite sense; *lavár*, to wash; from *lódo*, mud, mire, or dirt.

Many have been the authors who treated on Etymologies, but who treated with better order and method was St *Isidore*, a Spaniard, whose rules has followed the Royal Academy at Madrid in their new dictionary of the Spanish language; to which I refer the curious.

Etymology (as a part of the Grammar) denotes and shews the way to find out the cases of nouns, tenses of verbs, their regularity and irregularity, and the variety of parts in a speech; some authors define Etymology thus: *The knowledge and discretion of the parts and particles of a speech.* And to proceed to particulars, we think it proper to begin with

CHAP. I.

Of the eight parts of speech, and especially of Nouns.

IN Spanish as well as in Latin, there are eight parts of speech.

Noun, Pronoun, Verb, Participle.	}	Adverb, Conjunction, Preposition, Interjection,	}
declin'd. undeclin'd.			

Of a Noun.

AN Noun is a part of speech, which signifies a thing without any reference to time, &c. as *máno*, a hand; *cása*, a house.

Nouns

Nouns are divided into substantives and adjectives.

A noun substantive is that which can stand by itself, without an adjective, as *hombre*, a man; *caballo*, a horse, &c. whereas the adjective cannot stand by it self, as being of no value without the addition of the substantive, as *bueno*, good; *brioso* mettlesome &c. give no perfect notion of themselves, but are explained by being conjoined to the substantives, as *hombre bueno*, a good man; *caballo brioso*, a mettlesome horse.

Nouns substantives are divided into proper names and appellatives. The proper names are such as signify certain determinate things, as *Juan*, John; *Roma*, Rome. Appellatives are those that signify things undeterminate, as *iglesia*, a church; *casa*, a house. Some of the nouns are called primitives, that is original; others derivatives for their being derived of others, as *lección*, *oído*. Nouns are again divided into simple, as *justo*, just; and compound, as *injusto*, unjust.

There are also diminutives and augmentatives, in both which the Spanish abounds more than any other language, there being no word but what admits of several diminutives, to represent the thing spoken of, little; and augmentatives, to represent it greater.

Diminutives are formed by adding to the word *illo*, *ico*, *ito*, *ete*, *uelo*, or *éjo*, and sometimes *ote*,

For Example,

Hombre, a man; forms *Hombrecillo*, *Hombrecico*,
Hombrecito.

Muchacho, a boy; *Muchachillo*, *Muchachico*,
Muchachito, *Muchachuelo*.

Where observe the difference between these several sorts, which is that those ending in *illo* and *uelo*, as

Hombrecillo, *Muchachuelo*, and the like, denote something of contempt, as, a pitiful little man or boy ; whereas those ending in *ico*, or *ito*, only denote smallness, and sometimes kindness, as when we say *Juanico* or *Juanito*, which is *Johnny* or *Jacky*.

Diminutives in *ete* and *ino* likewise denote nothing but smallness, as *mózo*, a youth ; *mozete*, a young lad ; *palóma*, a dove ; *palomito*, a young pigeon ; whereas those in *ejo* imply at the same time something of contempt or dislike, as *cuchíllo*, a knife ; *cuchillijo*, a pitiful little knife ; *bidálgo*, a gentleman ; *bidalgote*, an inconsiderable gentleman.

The same is also used in adjectives, as *grande*, large or great ; *grandezillo*, *grandezico*, *grandezuelo*, *grandete*, all which signify *largish*, as we may express it, or *somewhat large*.

There are moreover diminutives formed upon diminutives ; as *chico*, small ; *chiquito*, smaller than the other, and *chiquitico*, very small.

There are on the other hand augmentatives, as has been said, which enlarge, or represent a thing bigger, without any degree of comparison ; and these are formed by adding *ázo*, *on*, or *óte*, to the word, as *hombre*, a man ; *bombrázo*, *bombrón* or *bombróte*, a great lusty man ; *pérko*, a dog ; *perrázo*, *perrón*, or *perrote*, a great large dog.

The nouns numeral, or of number, called cardinals, are as follows :

Uno, one.
Dos, two.
Tres, three.
Quátro, four.
Cinco, five.
Séis, six.
Siete, seven.
Ocho, eight.

Nuéve, nine.
Diéz, ten.
'Once, eleven.
Dóce, twelve.
Tréce, thirteen.
Catórce, fourteen.
Quince, fifteen.
Diez y seis, sixteen.

Diez y siéte, *seventeen.*Diez y ócho, *eighteen.*Diez y nueve, *nineteen.*Veinte, *twenty.*Veinte y uno, *twenty one.*Veinte y dos, *twenty two.*

&c.

Tréinta, *thirty.*Quarénta, *forty.*Cincuenta, *fifty.*Sesenta, *sixty.*Setenta, *seventy.*Ochenta, *eighty.*Noventa, *ninety.*Ciento, *a hundred.*Ciento y uno, *a hundred and one,* &c.Dociéntos, or Ducientos *two hundred.*Treciéntos, *three hundred.*Quatrocíentos, *four hundred.*Quinientos, *five hundred.*Seiscientos, *six hundred.*Setecientos, *seven hundred.*Ochocientos, *eight hundred.*Nuévecientos } *nine hundred.*
orNovecientos, } *nine hundred.*Mil, *a thousand.*Mil y Quiniéntos, *a thousand five hundred.*Dos mil, *two thousand.*Tres mil, *three thousand,*

&c.

Cién mil, *an hundred thousand.*Millón, *a million.*

N. B. That all these cardinals are undeclined, and of the common gender, except *uno*, *una*, *uno*, in plural *unos*, *unas*, and *ciento*, *dociéntos*, *ducentás*. *Uno* masculine (in the singular only) when it comes before a noun loses *o*, as *un libró*, a book; *un soldádo*, a soldier. *Ciento* likewise loses *o* when before a noun, either masculine, or feminine, as *cién soldádos*, hundred soldiers; *cién mugéres*, hundred women: but when another number follows it with a conjunction between, then it retains *o*, as *ciento y uno*, *ciento y dos*, &c. When *ciento* has *un* before, then it is made substantive, and governs a genitive, as *un ciento de cabállos*, or *un centenár de cabállos*, an hundred of horse.

All the numbers from *ciento* to *mil*, are masculine, and may be made feminine, changing *o* in *as*, as *dociéntas*; *ducentás*, *mil* is undeclined, and of the common gender, but *millón*, a million, is

42 The RUDIMENTS of
is masculine and declined, as, *un millón*, *dos millones*.

The ordinals which declare the order of time, or place, are

Primero, <i>first.</i>	Trigésimo, or Treinténo, <i>thirtieth.</i>
Segundo, <i>second.</i>	Quadragésimo, or Qua- renténo, <i>fortieth.</i>
Tercero, <i>third.</i>	Quinquagésimo, or Cin- cuenténo, <i>fiftieth.</i>
Quarto, <i>fourth.</i>	Sexagésimo, or Sesenté- no, <i>sixtieth.</i>
Quinto, <i>fifth.</i>	Septuagésimo, or Seten- téno, <i>seventieth.</i>
Sexto, <i>sixth.</i>	Octuagésimo, or Ochen- téno, <i>eightieth.</i>
Séptimo, <i>seventh.</i>	Nonagésimo, or Noven- téno, <i>ninetieth.</i>
Octávo, <i>eighth.</i>	Centésimo, Cienténo, or <i>Centéno, hundredth.</i>
Nóno, or Novéno, <i>ninth.</i>	Docientésimo, or Docien- téno, <i>two hundredth.</i>
Décimo, or Decéno, <i>tenth.</i>	Trecentésimo, or Tre- centéno, <i>three hun- dredth.</i>
Undécimo, or Oncéno, <i>eleventh.</i>	Quattrocentésimo, or Quattrocienténo, <i>four hundredth.</i>
Duodécimo, or Docéno, <i>twelfth.</i>	Quingentésimo, or Qui- nienténo, <i>five hun- dredth, &c.</i>
Décimotercio, or Tre- céno, <i>thirteenth.</i>	Milésimo, <i>thousandth.</i>
Décimoquarto, or Cator- céno, <i>fourteenth.</i>	
Décimoquinto, or Quin- céno, <i>fifteenth.</i>	
Décimo sexto, <i>sixteenth.</i>	
Décimo séptimo, <i>Seve- teenth.</i>	
Décimo octávo, <i>eight- eenth.</i>	
Décimo nono, <i>nineteenth.</i>	
Vigésimo, or Veinténo, <i>twentieth.</i>	

Note, that the Spaniards make use of the ordinals and cardinals promiscuously, as *en el año de mil se-
cientos y ócho*, for *en el año milésimo seiscentésimo y
octavo*: *el año quince*, for *décimo quinto*; *ciento
setenta*

setenta y siéte, for *centésimo septuagésimo séptimo*, this must be understood only in the computation of years, chapters, &c. the ordinals are masculine, and by changing *o* in *a* are feminine, as *primero*, *primera*.

The nouns numeral called distributives, or of order, are

De *úno* en *úno*, one by one.

De *dos* en *dos*, by two and two.

De *tres* entre*s*, by three and three.

De *quátro* en *quátro*, by four and four.

De *cinco* en *cinco*, by five and five, &c.

as *los Fráiles van de dos en dos fuéra del convento*, the Fryars whēn they go out of the convent they go by two and two.

Note, that when the letter *a* is put between the two cardinals as *úno à úno*, then *à* stand instead of *contra*, against ; as *dos à dos*, two to or against two : the same is in these, *tántos à tántos*, so many against so many, as *riñámos quátro à quátro*, or *tántos à tántos*, let us fight four to four, or so many against so many, that is even or equal in number.

Of ADJECTIVES.

TH E termination of Spanish adjectives is for the most part in *e*, or *o*, as *grande*, large ; *dulce*, sweet ; *bréve*, short ; *buéno*, good ; *santo*, holy, &c.

But there are other adjectives also, whose termination is in *l*, as *útil*, useful ; *débil*, weak ; *frágil*, frail ; *fértil*, fruitful ; and others in *z*, as *capáz*, capable ; *rapáz*, ravenous.

Those that terminate in *e*, never vary in any gender ; so in the adjectives, *grande*, great ; *dulce*, sweet ; *terrible*, terrible, we say in the masculine gender,

44 The RUDIMENTS of

gender, *hombre grande*, a great man; in the feminine, *mujer grande*, a great woman; and in the neuter, *lo grande*, that which is great.

Those that terminate in *o*, in the feminine gender, change their termination into *a*, as in *bueno*, good, the masculine is, *hombre bueno*, a good man, the feminine, *mujer buena*, a good woman; but the neuter is again in *o*, as *lo bueno*, that which is good.

Such as terminate in *l*, or *z*, never change in any gender.

The adjectives *grande*, great; and *bueno*, good; are often placed before the substantives, and then sometimes they loose the last syllable, as is usual to say, *gran hombre*, a great man; *buén caballo*, a good horse; but the feminine gender, *buena*, is not liable to that abbreviation, because the cutting off the *a*, would make it masculine, and therefore it must always be said, *buena mujer*, a good woman; *buena casa*, a good house.

Santo, when it signifies a saint, has always the last syllable cut off before the proper name, and we say, *San Pedro*, St Peter; *San Andrés*, St Andrew, &c. except only out of this general rule, *Santo Domingo*, *Santo Tomás*, *Santo Toribio*, and any saints names that begin with *Do*, or *To*, because the cutting off the last syllable of *Santo*, before them would sink the sound of the name. In speaking of a female saint, no letter is cut off, but it is pronounced at length, as *Santa Apolónia*, *Santa Margarita*, &c.

The degrees of comparison.

ALL Adjectives have their three degrees of comparison; the positive, which plainly and simply denotes the thing, as *dócto*, learned; *discreto*, discreet, &c.

The comparative either enhances or debases the thing, making a comparison, as *mas dócto*, more learned;

learned ; *ménos dòcto*, less learned ; *mas santo*, more holy ; *ménos santo*, less holy.

The superlative raises the thing to the highest pitch, or debases it to the lowest, as *cabállo velocíssimo*, a most fleet horse ; *cára bellíssima*, a most beautiful face.

In Spanish there is no comparative degree formed from the positive, as in the Latin, but that defect is supplied, by adding the article *mas*, more, or *ménos*, less, to the positive ; as *claro*, clear ; *mas claro*, clearer, or more clear ; *obscuro*, dark ; *ménos obscuro*, less dark.

The superlative degree is formed when the positive ends in a vowel, by changing that last vowel into *íssimo*, as from *claro*, clear ; make the superlative *claríssimo*, most clear ; or by the adverb *mui*, very ; or by *mucho mas*, saying *mui*, or *mucho mas* *claro* : but if the positive ends in a consonant, add *íssimo*, as from *víl*, base ; *vilíssimo*, most base ; from *capáz*, capable, *capacíssimo*, most capable.

The six following words are an exception from the rules above, in relation to the comparative degree, for their superlatives follow the common rule, where note that in these the comparative quite varies from the positive, as follows.

Buéno, good ; *méjor*, better ; *boníssimo*, or *óptimo*, best of all.

Málo, bad ; *peór*, worse ; *péssimo*, or *malíssimo*, worst of all.

Grández, great ; *mayór*, greater ; *grandíssimo*, or *máximo*, greatest of all.

Pequeño, little ; *ménor*, less ; *pequeñíssimo*, or *minímo*, least of all.

Mucho, much ; *mas*, more ; *muchíssimo*, most of all.

Poco, little ; *ménos*, less ; *poquíssimo*, least of all.

These two are without a positive and comparative, *Acérrimo*,

Acérrimo, extraordinary eager, tenacious, &c.
Uñrimo, extraordinary fruitful.

Of GENDERS.

IT is no easy matter to determine, whether there are as many genders in Spanish, as in the Latin, which has five, viz. the masculine, the feminine, the neuter, the common of two, and the common of three. The question arises from the Spanish, having no substantives of the neuter gender, whence it follows that no adjectives can have it, as being only an accident of the other, and there cannot be that in the accident which is not in the subject; whence it will follow that there can be only three genders, the masculine, the feminine, and the common of two.

But this notion, though supported by many, must needs be erroneous; for it is plain that when adjectives, pronouns, and participles, are used as substantives, there is a neuter gender, as appears by the three several articles that express them, for *el* is the masculine, *la* the feminine, and *lo* the neuter; for example, *el hombre*, the man; *la muger*, the woman; and *lo bueno*, that which is good. This is again demonstrable in the articles, *éste caballo*, this horse; *ésta Burra*, this she ass; and *ésto*, this thing; which exactly answer to the Latin, *bis*, *bæc*, *hoc*: and therefore it is infallible that these three genders must have a being. As to the others, take the following rules.

1. All adjectives, pronouns, and participles, are of the common gender of three, that is, they will admit of three articles, *éste*, *ésta*, *ésto*, by which the three genders are expressed, which is not only to be supposed when they alter their termination, as *buéno*, *buéna*, *buéno*, but also when they always retain the same, as *amante*, *prudente*, &c.

2. All nouns that are under one and the same termination expressing both man and woman, or the male and female of any sort of living creature, are of the common gender of two, as *éste guárda*, this man keeper ; *ésta guárda*, this woman keeper.

3. The epicene under one termination denotes both the male and female of all animals, and yet has only the masculine, or the feminine article, to express both kinds, for which reason the words *mácho*, male ; or *bémbara*, female ; are added to make the distinction, as, *ésta codorniz mácho*, this cock quail ; *éste zorzal bémbara*, this hen thrush.

4. All names signifying the males of any sort of animals, are of the masculine gender, as *Pédro*, Peter ; *hombre*, a man ; *cónde*, an earl ; *León*, a lion. And all that signify the female of any sort, are of the feminine gender, as *Maria*, Mary ; *mugér*, a woman ; *marquésa*, a marchioness.

Those words are of the doubtful gender, which have sometimes the masculine, and sometimes the feminine prefixed by authors. But for as much as this ambiguity at first proceeded from ignorance, it will be proper for those who understand better, notwithstanding the privilege grounded on custom, to give every word its proper gender. Some words of this sort that occur, are *árite*, *canál*, *color*, *eclipse*, *embléma*, *mar*, *órden*, *márgen*, *orígen*, *théma*. These we frequently find used with either of the articles *el*, or *la*, as, *el árite*, or *la árite*, the art ; and yet it ought certainly to be *la*, to denote the feminine, as in the Latin, from whence it is derived ; the same may be said of all others which of right should ever follow their original.

Rules to know the gender of nouns.

AL L nouns ending in *a* are of the feminine gender, as *pláza*, a square, or market; *rósa*, a rose; *cása*, a house. The exceptions are *planéta*, a planet; *cométa*, a comet, or blazing star; *día*, a day; *prophéta*, a prophet; *evangélista*, an evangelist; *poéta*, a poet; *Calvinista*, a Calvinist; *Jesuita*, a Jesuit; also such as are derived from the Greek, as *dóigma*, a dogma, or a received opinion, *probléma*, a problem; which are masculine, but *embléma*, an emblem, is of doubtless gender.

Nouns ending in *e* are generally of the masculine gender, as *diénte*, a tooth; *mónete*, a mountain. Except, *fé*, faith; *fuénte*, a fountain; *lláve*, a key; *léche*, milk; *ménte*, the mind; *tórre*, a tower; *toxe*, a granary; *ánade*, a duck; *alvayálde*, cæse; *áve*, a fowl; *cálle*, a street; *cárne*, flesh; *cláve*, a key of an organ; *córtex*, a prince's court; *corriénte*, a current; *dóte*, a dowry; *espécie*, a species; *frénte*, the forehead; *génte*, people; *muérte*, death; *niéve*, snow; *nóche*, night; *núbe*, a cloud; *náve*, a ship; *puénte*, a bridge; *párte*, a part; *serpiénte*, a serpent; all which are feminine; but *córtex*, when it signifies cutting, shaping, or contriving, is masculine.

Again, all nouns ending in *re*, that have a mute letter before it, are feminine, as *costúmbre*, custom; *sángre*, blood, &c. From which general rule are likewise excepted, *cobre*, copper; *cófre*, a trunk; *enjambré*, a swarm; *nómbre*, a name; and the names of months, *Setiembre*, *Ostíbre*, *Noviembre*, *Deciembre*, which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *i* are masculine, if derived from the Arabick, as *albelí*, a violet, according to *Nebriensis*; yet some will have it to be a clove gilliflower; *albolí*, or *alborí*, a granary; *zaborí*, one that pretends to see into things that are not transparent,

transparent, as stone-walls, &c. But such words taken from the Greek are feminine, as *éxtasi*, an extasy; *Sintáxi*, Syntax.

Nouns ending in *o* are masculine, as *cámpo*, a field; *témplo*, a church; except *máno*, a hand; *náo*, a ship; *pró*, good; for we say, *buéna pro os hágá*, much good may it do you.

Nouns ending in *u* are masculine, as *Espíritu*, the spirit; *ímpetu*, violence.

Nouns ending in *y* are feminine, as *léy*, law; *grúa*, a flock. Except *Réy*, a King.

This is all that can be said of nouns ending in vowels; next follow those that end in consonants.

Nouns ending in *d* are generally of the feminine gender, as *charidád*, charity; *babilidád*, ability; except *césped*, a turf; *huésped*, an host, or guest; *ardid*, a stratagem; *Adalid*, a leader; *Cenid*, ~~the Z-~~ ninth; *almud*, a certain measure; *ataud*, a coffin; *laud*, a lute, which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *l* are masculine, as *pardál*, a sparrow; *arancél*, a list or roll. The exceptions are *cál*, lime; *sál*, salt; *señál*, a sign, or token; *cárcel*, a prison; *biél*, gall; *miél*, honey; *piél*, the skin.

Nouns ending in *n* are masculine, as *carbón*, cole; *Rabadán*, a chief among shepherds; *almazén*, a storehouse. Except *sién*, the temple of the head; *sartén*, a frying-pan; and all words derived from the Latin termination in *go*, as *imágen*, an image, from *imago*; *márgen*, a margin; from *margo*, &c. Likewise those ending in *ion*, as *región*, a region; *elección*, election; and those ending in *azón*, as *razón*, reason; from which again except, *corazón*, the heart; *tarazón*, a piece; which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *r* are masculine, as *amor*, love; *Alcáza*, a palace; except *segur*, an axe, *flór*, a flower; *labór*, work; *mugér*, a woman.

Nouns ending in *s* are masculine, as *combés*, the deck of a ship; *País*, a country, or landskip. Ex-

*The RUDIMENT S of
cept miés, harvest ; Rés, a head of cattle ; tós, a
cough ; and proper names of women, as Ignés,
Agnes.*

Nouns ending in *x* are masculine, as *relóx*, a
clock ; *carcáx*, a quiver.

Nouns ending in *z*, are for the most part femi-
nine, as *páz*, peace ; *niñéz*, childhood ; *naríz*, the
nose ; *bóz*, a sickle ; *lúz*, light. Except *agráz*,
verjuice ; *soláz*, comfort ; *antifaz*, a veil, or co-
vering for the face ; *almiréz*, a mortar ; *dobléz*, a
fold, or falsehood ; *jaéz*, furniture for a horse ; *pez*,
a fish ; *axedréz*, a chequer, or draught-board ; *var-
níz*, varnish ; *tapíz*, a carpet ; *matíz*, a shadowing
in painting ; *albornóz*, a moorish coat ; *arráz*,
rice ; *altramíz*, a lupine ; all which are mascu-
line.

To these rules may be added, that all nouns signi-
fying the male, must of course be masculine, as
Dúque, a Duke ; *gállo*, a cock ; *león*, a lion ; and
those denoting a female, must be feminine, as *Con-
désa*, a Countess ; *gallína*, a hen.

It is further to be observed, that whatsoever the
termination happens to be, the proper names of
rivers are always masculine, as *el Guadiána*, and so
of any others, &c.

Of the other accidents belonging to a Noun.

TH E accidents usually belonging to a noun,
are its declination, cases, numbers, and arti-
cles ; but all these particulars must be explained in
the following manner.

Of Declensions or Declinations.

NOUNS in Spanish are not declined by alter-
ing or varying the termination, or last syl-
lable, as is done in the Latin, but by adding and
varying

varying the articles, as they are peculiar to each case.

And if the declensions are known by the variation of the nouns ; it being certain that the *Spaniards* only vary in the plural number : it may be said by deduction that there are five distinct declensions in *Spanish*, as in *Latin* : because the plural numbers end in :

As, as *régla*, *réglas*, a rule.

Es, as *pádre*, *pádres*, a father.

Is, as *rubí*, *rubís*, and *rubies*, a ruby.

Os, as *témplo*, *témplos*, a temple or church.

Us, as *tribu*, *tribus*, a tribe.

There are three particles or notes to denote the cases of a Noun, viz. *De* for the genitive and ablative, *à* or *pára* for the dative, and *ò* for the vocative. These particles are called by other authors *Articles*, but without reason, because the *article* is declinable, and the above particles can never be declined.

Of the Cases.

TH E Spaniards have six cases, like other languages, being

Nominative, or that which names the thing, and generally goes before the verb, as *Pédro perdió su cápa*, Peter lost his cloak.

Genitive, or that which shows to whom the thing belongs, or from whom it proceeds, as *éste es el perro de Pédro*, this is the dog of Peter ; *Maria es hija de Joseph*, Mary is Joseph's daughter ; so that this case answers to this question, *whose* or *whence* ?

Dative, or that which shows the place or person to whom the thing is given, and answereth to this question, *to whom or to what* ? as *dí mi espáda à mi hermano*. I gave my sword to my brother.

Accusative, or that which declares the subject of the verb; and answers to this question *whom or what?* and follows generally the verb, as *esta mañana recibí éste presente*, this morning I received this present.

Vocative, is called the case of calling, admiring, or saluting, as *O Pedro ven aquí*, O Peter, pray come here, &c.

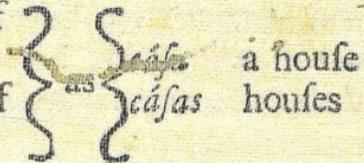
Ablative, or that which denotes the place or person from whom the thing is taken, and is generally joined to a preposition, as *procédo de la tierra*, I proceed from the earth.

Of the Numbers.

TH E Spaniards like the Latins, have two numbers, viz.

Singular, which speaketh of one,

Plural, which speaketh of many,



The singular Spanish, if end with a vowel is made plural by adding the letter *s* after it, as *hombre*, *hombres*; *témplo*, *templos*; if end with an *i* vowel is made plural by adding *s* or *es*, as *rubí*, *rubis*, or *rubíes*, a ruby; *borceguí*, *borceguís*, or *borceguíes*, but generally in *es*, except *maravedí*, which makes *maravedís*, or *maravedises*, &c. if the noun end with a consonant in singular, then is made plural by adding *es*, as *dolór*, *dolóres*; *Apóstol*, *Apóstoles*; *páz*, *lúz*; *véz*, *vóz*, change *z* into *c* in plural, as has been observed before, saying *páces*, *lúces*, &c. *x* is not changed into *g* in plural, as some authors wrongfully observe, but is retained, and so from *relón* say in plural *relónes*; *carcán*, *carcáxes*.

Of the Spanish articles.

TH E R E are three articles in the *Spanish* language, as well as in the *Latin*, and are borrowed of the pronoun, *viz.* *el* for the masculines, *la* for the feminines, and *lo* for the neuters. An article (which is an accident to the Noun, and a necessary one to the modern languages) is *a monosyllable*, or *a dictio composed of one syllable*, *it is declinable, and serves to distinguish the genders.* The *Spaniards* make use of the articles before all the nouns, except the proper names as in the *English* tongue. *Note*, that the *English* have but one undeclined article, *viz.* *the* for the masculine and feminine, and the particle *it* which often serves for the neuter: so that the *English* make no difference in genders by their article, when they speak of inanimates, ~~except only~~ the word *ship*, which is feminine, and then they make use of the relative *she*, *ella*, saying *she is a 20 gun ship*, *ella es una nave de 20 cañones*.

El.

This article is irregular in the plural, and make *los*, and tho' always placed before nouns masculine as *el hombre*, the man: it is also used before the feminine nouns beginning with *a* (and ~~this~~ only in singular, because in plural we say *las almas, las aguas*) as *el agua*, the water; *el alma*, or *áнима*, the soul; which is permitted *euphonice gratia*, for the better sound, to avoid two *a*'s coming together, or the cutting one off, which is little used in *Spanish*; because *la agua*, would sound like *l'agua*, and therefore for the more distinction they say *el agua*, as in *French* they say *mon ame*, tho' *ame* be of the feminine gender, and not *ma ame* or *m'ame*. Yet is not this a general rule, for the most received

34 The RUDIMENT S of

custom is to preserve *la* for the words of three or four syllables, as *la antiguedad*, antiquity; *la Academia*, the academy.

El is often put before the verb in the infinitive mood, when followed by another verb, as *el comér en tiempo es bueno*, *comer tambien el dormir quando se necesita*; to eat when 'its convenient does good, as it is also to sleep when it is wanted.

When the particles *de* or *a* are joined to *el*, often happens that the Spaniards make one syllable of both, as instead of *de el* or *a el* they say *del* or *al*, as it is said before in the Orthography.

Le in singular, and *les* in plural are often taken as articles by some authors, but without any grounds for so saying; because they never are used before nouns, but only as relatives after verbs in dative or accusative, according to the case governed by the verb, they are likewise used before the verbs, as *díxele esto*, I told him this; *les acompañé*, "I accompanied them.

La

Is to be placed before nouns feminine, as *la mugér*, the woman; except those nouns that begin with *a*, as has been said just above: it is likewise used before and after the verb, tho' not as article, but as relative, as *la llamé*, I called her; *llamadla*, call her; the plural of *la* is *las*, and often supplies the noun substantive, as *béso las de v. m^o.* that is *las manos*.

Lo,

As has been said, is the article of the neuter gender, and only used before adjectives, made substantives or taken in that sense, as *lo grande*, that which is great; *lo bueno*, that which is good, this article has no plural number, sometimes *lo* is taken absolutely,

lutely, as *todo lo que me mandare v. m^d. haré con gusto,*
I will do with pleasure every thing that you will or
shall command me. It is used likewise before and
after a verb as relative; as *lo dire*, I will say it;
bázlo, do it.

What has been said of the articles as articles, I
think is sufficient for the present, and for the rest I
refer the reader to the chapter of Pronouns, and to
the Syntax.

The Masculine article is thus declin'd :

The Singular Number.

Nominative, *el*, the
Genitive, *del*, or *de el*, of the
Dative, *á el*, or *al*, or *pára
el*, to the
Accusative, *el*, the
Ablative, *del*, or *de el*, from the

The Plural Number.

Nominative, *los*, the
Genitive, *de los*, of the
Dative, *á los*, to the
Accusative, *los*, the
Ablative, *de los*, from the.

The Feminine thus :

The Singular Number.

Nominative, *la*, the
Genitive, *de la*, of the
Dative, *á la*, or *pára la*, to the
Accusative, *la*, the
Ablative, *de la*, from the

The Plural Number.

Nominative, *las*, the
Genitive, *de las*, of the
Dative, *á las*, to the
Accusative, *las*, the
Ablative, *de las*, from the.

The Neuter article thus :

The Singular Number.

Nominative, *lo*, the
Genitive, *de lo*, of the
Dative, *á lo*, or *pára lo*, to the
Accusative, *lo*, the
Ablative, *de lo*, from the

It has no Plural Number.

Nor are these articles capable of any vocative,
without we say, *O* is general to them all, as, *O
bombr*, *O man*, *O mugér*, *O woman*.

Examples of the Nouns in their several Terminations.

Words end in *a*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Hémbra, <i>a Female</i>	Hémbras, <i>Females</i>
Fruta, <i>Fruit</i>	Frutas, <i>Fruits</i>

Words ending in *e*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Hombre, <i>a Man</i>	Hombres, <i>Men</i>
Liébre, <i>a Hare</i>	Liébres, <i>Hares</i>

Words ending in *i*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Rubi, <i>a Ruby</i>	Rubis, or Rubies, <i>Rubies</i>
Javalí, <i>a Wild Boar</i>	Javalis, or Javalies, <i>Wild Boars</i>

Words ending in *o*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Caballo, <i>a Horse</i>	Caballos, <i>Horses</i>
Milagro, <i>a Miracle</i>	Milagros, <i>Miracles</i>

Words ending in *u*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Espíritu, <i>a Spirit</i>	Espíritus, <i>Spirits</i>
Tribu, <i>a Tribe</i>	Tribus, <i>Tribes</i>

Words ending in *y*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Réy, <i>a King</i>	Réyes, <i>Kings</i>
Léy, <i>a Law</i>	Léyes, <i>Laws</i>

Words ending in *d*.

Sing.

Plur.

Verdád, *Truth*
Merced, *a Favour*

Verdádes, *Truths*
Mercédes, *Favours*

Words ending in *l*.

Animál, *an Animal*
Gentíl, *a Pagan*

Animáles, *Animals*
Gentíles, *Gentiles*

Words ending in *n*.

Sing.

Plur.

Pan, *Bread*
Celemín, *a Peck*

Pánes, *Loaves*
Celemínes, *Pecks*

Words ending in *r*.

Sing.

Plur.

Pesár, *Grief*
Dolór, *Pain*

Pesáres, *Sorrows*
Dolóres, *Pains*

Words ending in *s*.

Sing.

Plur.

Diós, *God*
Mes, *a Month*

Diósdes, *Gods*
Méses, *Months*

Words ending in *x*.

Sing.

Plur.

Carcáx, *a Quiver*
Relox, *a Clock*

Carcáxes, *Quivers*
Relóxes, *Clocks*

Words ending in *z*.

Sing.

Plur.

Páz, *a Peace*
Juéz, *a Judge*

Páces, *Peaces*
Juéces, *Judges*

Examples

*Examples of declining the three several Genders.**Example of the Masculine Gender.**Sing.**Plur.**Nom.* El Pádre, *the Father**Nom.* Los Pádres, *the Fathers**Gen.* Del Pádre, *of the Father**Gen.* De los Pádres, *of the Fathers**Dat.* Al Pádre, *or pára el Pá-*
*dre, to the Father**Dat.* A los Pádres, *or pára los*
*Pádres, to the Fathers**Accus.* Al or El Pádre, *the Father**Acc.* Los Pádres, *the Fathers**Voc.* O Pádre, *O Father**Voc.* O Pádres, *O Fathers**Abl.* Del Pádre, *from the Father**Abl.* De los Pádres, *from the*
*(Fathers)**Example of the Feminine Gender.**Sing.**Plur.**Nom.* La MÁdre, *the Mother**Nom.* Las MÁdres, *the Mothers**Gen.* De la MÁdre, *of the Mo-*
*(ther**Gen.* De las MÁdres, *of the Mo-*
*thers**Dat.* A la MÁdre, *to the Mo-*
*(ther**Dat.* A las MÁdres, *to the Mo-*
*thers**Acc.* La MÁdre, *the Mother**Acc.* Las MÁdres, *the Mothers**Voc.* O MÁdre, *O Mother**Voc.* O MÁdres, *O Mothers**Abl.* De la MÁdre, *from the Mo-*
*(ther**Abl.* De las MÁdres, *from the*
*(Mothers**Example of the Neuter Gender.**Sing.**Nom.* Lo-bueno, *that which is good**Gen.* De lo-bueno, *of that which is good**Dat.* A lo-bueno, *to that which is good**Acc.* Lo-bueno, *that which is good**Voc.* O bueno, *O that which is good**Abl.* De lo-bueno, *from that which is good*.

These Adjectives used as Substantives have, as has been said before, no Plural Number.

Common Adjectives are declined as Substantives, according to their Genders; and therefore there needs no Examples of them.

Some

Some observations concerning derived and compound Nouns.

THE Nouns of dignity given to Men, are some of them Substantives, and others Adjectives, the nature of Substantives requires, that they be not given to women, who are possessed of the like dignity, without deriving the Feminine from the Masculine; and thus from *Dúque*, a Duke is deriv'd *Duquésa*, a Duchess; from *Conde*, an Earl, *Condesa*, a Countess; from *Príncipe*, a Prince, *Princesa*, a Princess; because *Príncipe* in Spanish is of the Masculine Gender. But when the Name of Dignity is a Noun Adjective, as *Teniente*, a Lieutenant, or a Deputy; *Asistente*, an Assistant; *Presidente*, a President, it serves both Sexes without any Variation; for in speaking of a President's Lady, she is not to be called *la Presidenta*, but *la Presidente*; and so in the rest of that sort.

They are guilty of the like Error who speaking of a wild, or mountain She-Goat, call her *Cabra monteza*, because the Adjective *Montés* shews both Genders, and therefore the Female is to be called *Montés*, as well as the Male. However the Adjectives that denote Kingdoms, or Nations, ending in *es*, are only applied to the Masculine Gender, and the Feminine has the addition of *a*, as in speaking of a *Frenchman*, or an *Englishman*, he is called *Francés*, or *Inglés*, but a Woman of those Nations is *Francésa*, or *Inglésa*.

CHAP. II.

Of Pronouns.

PRONOUNS are certain words put into the place, or substituted instead of Nouns, serving to

to shew, or express the person, or thing before uamed, without naming it over again.

There are several sorts of Pronouns, some of them are called Primitives, as *yó*, I, *tu*, you, *si*, himself, *nos*, or *nosotros*, we; *vos*, or *vosotros*, &c.

Others are Derivatives, or Possessives, because derived from those above, and denoting possession, as *mío*, mine, *túyo*, thine, *suyo*, his, *nuestro*, ours, *vuestro*, yours; with their feminine gender, *mía*, *túya*, *suya*, *nuestra*, *vuestra*. It is to be observ'd, that these pronouns, of the singular number when placed before substantives, always lose their last syllable, and for *mío*, *túyo*, *suyo*, must be said, *mi*, *tu*, *su*, as *mi Pádre*, my Father; *tu MÁdre*, your Mother; *su Avuéllo*, his Grandfather. But when a question is asked, then the answer must be *mío*, *túyo*, or *suyo*, as *cuyo es éste guánte?* whose glove is that? The answer is *mío*, mine, or *túyo*, yours, or *suyo*, his. When they are absolute, or taken as neuter, then they have the article *lo* before, as *lo mío*, that which is mine; *lo túyo*, that which is thine, &c. The same is practised in the feminine gender.

To form the plural number of these pronouns *mío*, *túyo*, *suyo*, or *mi*, *tu*, *su*, add the Letter *s*, as was before said in the nouns, and you have *míos*, *túyos*, *suyos*, *mis*, *tus*, and *sus*.

There are also demonstrative pronouns, as *éste*, *ésta*, *ésto*, This; *ése*, *ésa*, *éso*, that; and *el*, *ella*, *éllo*, he, she, that, *éste*, *ésta*, *ése*, *ésa*, and *el* are always placed before nouns, as *éste libro*, this book, *ésa carne*, that flesh; but *ésto*, *éso* and *éllo*, are spoken absolutely, without being joined to any noun; *ésto*, signifying this thing; *éso*, that thing; and *éllo*, the thing.

The particles making the cases in declining, when they come before these pronouns beginning with *e*, are not always contracted, and it may be said *de este*, or *deste*, *de esto*, or *desto*.

The relative pronouns are, *qual*, which, *quién*, who, *qué*, what.

For declining of pronouns, see the following examples.

The pronoun of the first person *Yo* is thus declin'd.

Sing.

- Nom. Yo, *I*
Gen. De mi, *Of me*
Dat. A mi, *To me*
Acc. Me, or a mi, *Me*
Abl. De mi, *From me*

Plur.

- Nom. Nos, or Nosotros, *We*
Gen. De nos, or de nosotros, *Of us*
Dat. A nos, or a nosotros, *To us*
Acc. Nos, or nosotros, *Us*
Abl. De nos, or de nosotros, *From us*

The second person *Tu* is thus declined:

- Nom. Tu, *You*
Gen. De ti, *Of you*
Dat. A ti, *To you*
Acc. Te, or a ti, *You*
Abl. De ti, *From you*

- Nom. Vos, or vosotros, *Ye*
Gen. De vos, or vosotros, *Of ye*
Dat. A vos, or vosotros, *To ye*
Acc. Vos, or vosotros, *Ye*
Abl. De vos, or vosotros, *From ye*

The third person *Si* thus:

Sing.

- Gen. De si, *Of himself,*
Dat. A si, *To himself,*
Accus. Se, or a si, *Himself,*
Ablat. De si, *From himself.*

And has no plural number, nor feminine gender, unless *mismo* be added to it for the masculine, and then *misma* must be for the feminine, and then it has *mismos* and *mismas* in the plural.

These pronouns in the singular number serve both the masculine and the feminine genders, as does *nos* and *vos* in the plural; but *nosotros* and *vosotros* are masculine, and the feminine is made by turning the last *o* into *a*, that is, instead of *nosotros* say *nosotras*, and instead of *vosotros* *vosotras*.

The

The Spaniards frequently in speech and writing use this pronoun *nos* with the first person plural of the imperative mood, taking away the *s* from the verb, as *vámonos*, for *vámos nos*, let us go ; *déxémonos*, for *déxemos nos*, let us leave ; and so they do of *vos*, losing the *v*, as *ídgos*, let ye go, instead of *ídvos*, or losing *d* in the second person plural, as *amáos*, let ye love, instead of *amádos*, or *amádgos*.

It is proper to observe, that the genitive case of these pronouns, seems to be in a manner superfluous, as never in use ; for if we are to speak by way of possession, we must not say *el libro es de mi*, which would be in English, the book is of me, but instead thereof, we must use the word, *mío*, viz. *el libro es mío*, the book is mine. So *el cavállo es de ti*, is not Spanish, and would signify, the horse is of you ; but it must be *el cavállo es túyo*, the horse is your's ; and lastly, *el fáyo es de si*, is as false, being the Coat is of him, but it must be, *el fáyo es suyo*, or *de v. m^d.* the coat is his. And if the question be asked, *cuya obra es ésta?* whose work is this ? the answer must be, *mía*, mine, or *túya*, yours, or *suya*, his.

These pronouns serve after a verb, which is then rather in the ablative, than the genitive case, as *que se dirá de mi ?* what will be said of me ? *que será de ti ?* what will become of you ? *el bábla de si*, he talks of himself.

The possessives *mío*, *túyo*, *suyo*, mine, thine, his, and *mi*, *tu*, *su*, my, your, his, as also, *nuéstro*, and *vuéstro*, need not be declined here, all of them following the same rule, without any variation.

The three pronouns, *yo*, *tu*, *el*, are used in composition with the word *mismo*, signifying itself, as *yo mismo*, I myself, *tu mismo*, you yourself, *el mismo*, he himself ; where it is to be noted that *el mismo*, also signifies the same, but then *el* is the article *the*. These three are declined as before, only that the *mismo* has a singular and a plural number, and

therefore we must say, *yo mismo*, *tu mismo*, and *el mismo*, in the singular, and *nosotros mismos*, *vosotros mismos*, and *ellos mismos*, in the plural; and so *mismo* and *mismos* for the masculine gender, and *misma* and *mismas* for the feminine.

The pronouns possessive are *Mío*, *Túyo*, *Suyo*, *Nuestro*, *Vuestro*, and the feminine gender of them *Mía*, *Túya*, *Suya*, *Nuestra*, *Vuestra*; but if placed before the substantive, then it must be *Mi*, *Tu*, *Su*, and in the plural *Mis*, *Tus*, *Sus*. It is proper also here to speak of the pronoun of interrogation, *Cuyo*, in the masculine, and *Cuya*, in the feminine gender, and *Cuyos* and *Cuyas*, in the plural number, which always denotes the genitive. To explain the proper use of these words, take these examples: Asking the question, *Cuyo es éste caballo?* that is *de quien es éste caballo?* Whose Horse is this? The answer is, *Mío*, mine, *Túyo*, yours, *Suyo*, his; and so in the feminine gender, only changing the *o* into *a*, as *cuya*, *mía*, &c. and in the plural number adding *s*, as *cuyos* or *cuyas*, &c.

Note, That *Cuyo* is likewise relative, as *el Rey*, *en cuya Mano está el bacér bien*, &c. the King in whose Hand or Power is, to do good, &c. *éste* *réo*, *cuyos delitos son grandes*, &c. This guilty person whose crimes are great, &c.

The Demonstratives *Este*, *Ese*, *Aquel*, *El*.

E'STE, This, as *éste Hombre*, this Man, *éste Caballo*, that Horse; *aqué*l is also *that*, but yet with this difference, that *éste* signifies *that* which is near to the person who is spoken to, whereas *aqué*l denotes *that* which is neither near him who is spoken to, nor him who speaketh.

These

These pronouns are thus declined :

Sing. <i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	
<i>Nom.</i> éste	ésta	ésto	<i>This</i>
<i>Gen.</i> de éste, or de ésta	désta, or de ésta	déstó, or de ésto	<i>Of this</i>
<i>Dat.</i> a éste	a ésta	a ésto	<i>To this</i>
<i>Acc.</i> éste, or a ésta	esta, or a ésta	ésto, or a ésto	<i>This</i>
<i>Abl.</i> de éste, or de ésta	désta, or de ésta	déstó, or de ésto	<i>From this</i>
Plur. <i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>No Neut.</i>	
<i>Nom.</i> éstos	éstas		<i>These</i>
<i>Gen.</i> déstos, or de éstos	déstas, or de éstas		<i>Of these</i>
<i>Dat.</i> a éstos	a éstas		<i>To these</i>
<i>Acc.</i> éstos, or a éstas	éstas, or a éstas		<i>These</i>
<i>Abl.</i> déstos, or de éstos	déstas, or de éstas		<i>From these</i>

'*Eſſe*, éſſa, éſſo, is declined in the same manner, the plural number being éſſos, éſſas. The like of *Aquél*, *Aquélla*, *Aquéllos*, *Aquéllas*.

So is *el*, he, *ella*, she, *éſſo*, the or that thing, *éſſos*, they, masculine, *ellas*, they, feminine. There is no neuter plural. The cases need not to be repeated, being the same as those before. The word *ótro*, is often joined to *éſſe*, or *éſſa*, as *Eſſotro*, or *Eſſeotro*, the other Man or Thing; *Eſſotra*, or *Eſſaotra*, the other Woman.

There are two other pronouns, which have only a plural number, as signifying two, which are *ámbos*, and *entrámbos*, both. To the first of them is often added *a dos*, that is, *' Ambos a dos*, both together, and *Entrámbos*, imports much the same. Note, that of *éſte*, and *éſſe*, is made *aquéſte*, *aquéſſe*, this or that very Man. And so in the feminine and neuter gender.

The relatives, Quién, Que, Qual.

QUIÉN, is either interrogative, or relative, as *Quién lo dice?* Who says it? *No bái quién lo fúfna,* no Man can endure it.

Qué, is also interrogative, and relative, as *Qué es ésto?* What is that? *El hombre que yo digo,* The Man I speak of.

Qual, signifies Which, as *Qual déllos?* which of them? To this is sometimes added *el*, for the masculine, *la* for the feminine, and *lo* for the neuter, as *el qual*, *la qual*, *lo qual*.

The declining of these consisting only in the addition of the articles, it is needless to run the same over again; only it must be observed, that *Que* has no plural number, as signifying What, which is incapable of it; and yet *Quién* and *Qual*, though they signify *Who*, and *Which*, have a plural, which is *Quiénes*, and *Quáles*, as *Quiénes son aquéllos?* Who are those? and *Quáles son los que dices?* What sort of people are those you speak of, or what are they?

El, is frequently joined to *Qual*, which we cannot so properly express in English, as signifying *Who*; but *lo qual*, is expressed, the which, these two conjoined are declined as follows?

Sing.	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
<i>Nom.</i> <i>El qual</i>		<i>la qual</i>	<i>lo qual</i>
<i>Gen.</i> <i>del qual</i>		<i>de la qual</i>	<i>de lo qual</i>
<i>Dat.</i> <i>al qual</i>		<i>a la qual</i>	<i>a lo qual</i>
<i>Acc.</i> <i>el qual, or al qual</i>		<i>la qual, or a la qual</i>	<i>lo qual, or a lo qual</i>
<i>Abl.</i> <i>del qual</i>		<i>de la qual</i>	<i>de lo qual</i>

Plur. *Masc.*

Nom. los quáles
Gen. de los quáles
Dat. a los quáles
Acc. los quáles, or
 (a los quáles)
Abl. de los quáles

Fem.

las quáles
 de las quáles,
 a las quáles
 las quáles, or a las
 (quáles)
 de las quáles

No Neuter.

When the word *Quiéra*, is added to *Quién*, or *Qual*, it quite alters the meaning, so *Quienquierá* signifies any person, or man whatsoever; and *Qualquierá*, is any one, whether man, or woman, or other thing. When *que* is added to *tal* thus, *que tal*, then stands for *quál* in Spanish.

Of the Reciprocals, or Relatives, me, te, se.

THESE three are only of the dative and accusative Cases, and have always a verb either before, or after them, as *Díme quién éres?* Tell me who you are? *Dóite el Parabién?* I give you Joy. *Fuése de aquí,* He went away from hence. They are also placed before verbs, as, *Pédro me dixo*, Peter told me. *Juán te dará*, John will give you. *El se alába.* He praises himself. Many other examples might be brought wherein these pronouns are variously used; but those things are better learnt by practice, than set down as rules.

Mi, ti, si, before spoken of as genitive Cases, the first two of *yo*, and *tu*, and the third without a proper nominative, are often join'd to the word *con*, with, and the syllable *go*, added to it, thus *Conmigo*, with me; *Contigo*, with you; *Consigo*, with himself. They have no variation for the genders, but serve both the masculine, and the feminine.

Note, That *proprio* stands often for *mísmo*, as *yo proprio*, or *yo mísmo*, *tu proprio*, &c.

The possessive *su*, and in plural *sus*, stands for his, her's, their, &c. as *el Rey con su Hijo el Príncipe*, the King with his Son the Prince; *la Reyna con su hija la Princesa*, the Queen with her Daughter the Princess.

Los súbditos deben obedecer, y pagár tributo à su Rey, the Subjects ought to obey, and pay tribute to their King.

El General comió con sus oficiales subalternos, the General dinned with his subaltern Officers.

Su stands also for *el*, or *la*, as *el hombre tiene su ser (el ser) de Dios*, Man has the being from God. *Su firma del capitán*, *su* for *la*; but to speak properly, read always *el ser*, the being; *la firma*, the sign, or one's name.

Add to these

The imperfect Pronouns, or properly these Nouns relatives: *Cierto*, certain; *yo*, one; *algún*, *alguien*, somebody, or *algo* in neuter, something; *cadauno*, each, every body; *nádie*, no body (these two last mentioned have no plural) *otro*, other; *sólo*, alone; *todo*, all; *tal*, such; *tanto*, so much; *quanto*, how much. And the two *púnique* words *fuláno* and *zutáno*, such a one. Note, That these are called by *Salv. Náves*, pronouns indefinites.

There are three Persons in the Pronouns, viz.

Sing.

1. Yo, I
2. Tu, Thou
3. El, or aquél, he

Plur.

- nos, or nosótros, we
- vos, or vosótros, ye
- éllos, or aquéllos; they

C H A P. III.

Of V E R B S.

A Verb is a part of speech, that signifies to be, to do, or to suffer, as *ser hombre*, to be a Man; *ámo*, I love; *sói amado*, I am loved: Is conjugated through Moods and Tenses; by Moods the Verb is changed according to the circumstances, as *yo hablo*, I speak, is the indicative; *hábla tu*, speak thou, the imperative, &c. Tenses are the distinction and variety of times, as *venía*, I was coming; *vine*, I came, &c.

Verbs are divided into personals, (so called because they have persons) as *yo ámo*, I love; *tu ámas*, thou lovest, &c. and impersonals, (because without persons) as *conviene*, it behoveth, *consta* it is plain.

The personals are subdivided into

Active		Neuter
Passive		Reciprocal.

Active signifies to do, as *enseñár*, to teach; *leér*, to read; and may be made passive by the auxiliary Verb *ser*, and the participle passive of the Verb, as *ser enseñado*, *sói enseñado*, &c.

Passive signifies to suffer, as *sói amado*. But note, That in the third person singular, and the third of the plural are conjugated not only with the auxiliar *ser*, but even with the particle *se*, as *Diós es amado*, or *Diós se áma*, God is beloved. *Bueno es que la virtud sea ballada*, or *se balle en un Príncipe*, it is good that Virtue be found in a Prince. *Que los Buenos sean amados*, or *se ámen*, that the

virtuous may be loved. By which you may see, that the participle Passive is varied in the conjugation of this Verb, saying, *Yo soy amado, nosotros somos amados.*

Neuter properly is that which signifies neither action nor passion, as *colorár*, to colour; *coloreár*, to recover a colour, or to give colour; *corrér*, to run, *assentír*, to assent. This Verb makes a perfect sense by itself, in which it differs from the active, as *duerme*, I sleep, *nieva*, it snows.

The verb Active says the same thing in the active and passive voices, as *yo amo à diós*, or *dios es amado de mi*, which can't be said by the Neuter in a proper manner.

The Neuter is either substantive, as *ser*, to be; or absolute (so called for its making a sense by itself) by action, as *blasphemár*, to blaspheme, *llueve*, it rains; or by passion, as *coloreár*, *ennegrecér*.

The verb reciprocal is that which return the sense backward, and is conjugated thus, *apercibirse*, to be prepared or provided for, *me apercíbo*, I prepare myself, *te apercíbes*, thou preparest thyself; and always has the particle *se* in the infinitive.

Note, That in the Spanish language, one Verb may be made active, passive, neuter, and reciprocal by the different senses that it may be applied to it, as *acostár*, to put one in it's bed, is active, and is made passive by the Verb auxiliar *estár*, and the participle passive, as *estoi acostádo*, I am put in my bed, or I lay down. When it signifies to follow one's party, or opinion, or to declare himself partial for a Prince, is Neuter, as *Pédro, dexádo el servicio de Fráncia, por proméssas de adelantamiento acostó à la parte de Espáña*. Peter having left the French service, by the promises he had on his being promoted, enlisted himself in the Spanish service. And when it signifies to come near to a place, as *acostarse aqui*, to come near to this place; then is reciprocal, as *si te acuéstras aquí*,

70 *The RUDIMENT S* of
aqui, te mataré, if you come near to this place, I
will kill you.

Some of the Verbs are regular, (so called for their being confined to rules) and others irregular (so called because they have no rule); but as their irregularity is various some time in the present tense of the indicative, in the preterperfect, future, in the imperative, preter imperfect and future of the optative, and otherwise in their participles, I shall take care to mention it in the Conjugations.

Of Conjugations.

TH E R E are three Conjugations in the *Spanish Tongue*, viz.

- | | | |
|-------------------|----|------------------------------|
| 1. in - <i>ir</i> | as | <i>Amár</i> , to love |
| 2. in <i>ér</i> | | <i>Respondér</i> , to answer |
| 3. in <i>ír</i> | | <i>Venír</i> , to come. |

So that the *Spanish* Verbs are to be looked for in the Dictionaries by their infinitives.

Of Moods.

TH E Moods are six, as in *Latin*, viz. The *Indicative*, or that which shows, or declares; the *Imperative*, or that which commands; *Optative*, or that which wishes, or desires; *Subjunctive*, which supposes something; *Potential*, or that by which something is expected; and the *Infinitive*, which leaves all undetermined.

Of Tenses.

TH E Tenses, which are the times of action, or passion, are three properly, being the present, the past, and the time to come: And with

those made by circumlocution are ten in the indicative Mood, *viz.* the present, preterimperfect, three preterperfects, the plus perfect, and four futures: And in the optative Mood there are nine, *viz.* the present, three preterimperfects, preterperfect, two preter plus perfects, and two futures.

Of the Indicative Mood.

THE Present Tense of all Conjugations of regular verbs, is formed by changing *ar*, *er*, or *ir* of the infinitive into *o*, as from *amár* say *ámo*, from *leér*, *leo*, from *cumplir*, *cumplo*; this tense extends itself to a future time, as *mañána es dia de fiesta*, to-morrow is a holy day.

The Preterimperfect of the first Conjugation is formed by changing *ár* into *ába*, as *amába*, I did love, or properly I was loving; and of the second and third Conjugation, is formed by changing *ér* and *ír* into *ía*, as *perdía*, *pedía*.

Note. That this Tense has two ways of explaining the second person plural through all Conjugations, as *amábadeis* or *amábais*; *perdiádeis* or *perdiáais*; *pediadéis* or *pedíais*.

The first Preterperfect of the first Conjugation by changing *ár* into *é*, as *amár*, *amé*; but of the second and third Conjugations by changing *ér* and *ír* into *í*, as *perdér*, *perdí*, *pedí*, *pedí*. This tense is called *Definite*, because it is a time perfectly past and expressed; as *el mes pasado hablé con el*, I spoke with him last month.

The second Perfect of all the Conjugations is formed of the auxiliar verb *havér*, and the participle passive of the verb treated of, as *hé hablado*, I have spoken, *hé perdido*, I have lost; *he pedido*, I have asked.

The third Perfect is formed in the same manner, as *húve hablado*, &c, but not so frequently used in Spanish as the other two.

Note, That these two latter are called Preterperfects indefinites, for their time is not determined, as *le he hablado*, I have spoken to him, but we don't say when.

So that the difference between the first preterperfect and the others, is that the former should express time, and the latter not; besides, that the first extends itself farther than the others (which are referred to time but lately past) you may say, *le hablé dos años ha*, I spoke to him two years ago; but you can't say *le he hablado dos años há*, I have spoken to him two years ago; because *he hablado* does only extend to a time so lately past, that it appears to have something of the present. These are *Valéra's Observations*, which I advise the Reader to observe, in order to avoid the frequent Equivocations that often happens in speaking and writing.

The Preterplusperfect thus: *había hablado*, *había perdido*, *había pedido*, I had spoken, lost, &c.

The first Future is formed of the infinitive, adding *é* after *r*, as of *hablár*, adding *e* say *hablaré*; *perdér*, *perderé*; *pedir*, *pediré*, having always the accent on the last letter.

The second Future with the auxiliary *bé*, *tengo*, or *débo*, and the infinitive Mood with *de* before it, as *be* or *tengo de dár*, I am to give, *débo de dar*, or *débo dár*, I am oblig'd, I must give.

The third thus: *Habré de hablár*, I shall be obliged to speak, &c.

The fourth (which properly is the second Preterplusperfect) thus: *Había de hablár*, I had, or I was to speak, &c.

Of the Imperative.

THE Imperative is made of the third person of the present of the indicative Mood, and of the present of the optative, as *áma* *w* thou; *áme*

áme aquél, let him love ; pierde tu, loose thou ; pierda el, let him loose, &c.

So that the third person of the indicative is the second of the imperative, and the third of the imperative is the first of the optative. The second plural is formed from the infinitive by changing *r* into *d*, as *amár* say *amád*, let ye love ; *perdér*, *perdéd* ; *pedir*, *pedid* ; and often the *d* is lost, saying *amaos* for *amád vos*, or *amád os*, and sometimes is transposed after *l*, as *amálos*, *amáles* for *amádlos*, or *amádles* ; and so it is often said *decilde* for *decidle*.

Of the Optative, Potential, and Subjunctive Moods.

OPTATIVE, or that wishes, or desires, has always annexed an adverb, as *óxala*, *ò si*, *pluguiese à Diós*, would to God, I pray God, or God grant ; *aunque*, *no obstante que*, *sin embargo que*, altho', notwithstanding.

Potential properly has no signs in Spanish, but in English has these, *can*, *may*, *might*, *could*, *should*, or *ought*, which are equal to these Spanish expressions, *puede ser que*, *es menester que*, as some authors will have it.

Subjunctive has always some conjunction annexed, as *si*, *cómo*, *que*, *cuando* : *if*, *as*, *that*, *when*, as *como yo áme*, as I may love ; but the tenses are all alike in these three Moods.

The present of the Optative is formed by the present of the Indicative changing *o* into *e* in the first conjugation, and into *a* in the second and third conjugations, as from *ámo* say *áme* ; *pírdo*, *pírda* ; *pído*, *pída*.

The first and second Preterimperfects are formed from the first person of the first preterperfect of the Indicative, as from *amé* in the first conjugation changing *e* into *ára* or *ásse* is made *amára*, *amásse* ; in the second and third conjugations add to the preterperfect

terperfect éra or ésse, as from *perdí* say *perdiéra*, *perdiéssē*, from *pedí* say *pidiéra*, *pidiéssē*.

The third Preterimperfect is formed from the infinitive, adding *ia*, as from *amár* say *amaría*, from *leér*, *leeríá*, from *pedír*, *pidiríá*.

Observe here, That these tenses have two ways to explain the second person plural, as *amorádeis* or *amárais*, *amássedecis*, or *amáffeis*, *amariádeis*, or *amárais*, and so in the other two conjugations.

Observe likewise, That these three tenses vary one from another, speaking in a right method; tho' there is such a confusion in explaining them, that hardly there is any difference made by the Spaniards. Some Authors adapt them to the three Moods, viz. *amára* to the Optative, *amáffe*, to the Subjunctive, and *amaría* to the Potential; as *oxala yo amára la virtud*, God grant that I might love virtue; *como yo amáffe a Diós*, *el me amaria*, as I could love God, he would love me.

Other Authors, as *Tominque*, *Cessér* in Gram. Rud. and *Villalba*, are of opinion, that *amára* denotes the disposition of a thing, or the readiness for an action; *amáffe* the beginning of it, and *amaria* the possibility to obtain it; or as *Terebio*, says the first imperfect is a tense of motion, *exquo* from whence, and related to the medium, as *de los veinte pesos le diéra diez para comprarse un vestido*, of the twenty pieces of eight I would give him ten, that he might buy himself a suit of cloaths; the second a tense medium, or *inquo*, as *como le ballasse haciendo loque le díxe*, as I should find him in doing what I told him. And the third a conditional tense, as *si lo haría*, *como el fuéra bueno*, I would do it, if he would be good.

One thing is certain amidst all these, that *aunque*, *como*, *oxala*, &c. follow the two first preterimperfects, and the third imperfect tense is used by way of interrogation, or suspension, saying:

baria

habría v. md. esto? Would you do this? *O que bien lo habría yo!* O that I could do it well! or with *si*.

The Preterperfect is formed from the auxiliar verb *habér*, and the participle passive thus; *háya amado*, *haya perdido*, *haya pedido*, when I have loved, &c.

The first Plusperfect thus: *Huviéra amado*, when I had loved.

The second, *huviéisse amado*, when I had loved.

1. Future is made of the first Preterimperfect, by changing *ra* into *re*, as *amára*, *amáre*; *perdiéra*, *perdiére*; *pediéra*, *pidiére*, with the same accent on all the syllables.

2. Future of the first Plusperfect by changing *ra* into *re*, and participle passive, as from *huviéra amado*, say in the future *huviére amado*. So that there are nine tenses in the Optative Mood, as well as in the Subjunctive and Potential.

Of the Infinitive Mood.

INFINITIVE signifieth to do, to suffer, or to be; and hath neither number, nor person, nor nominative Case before as *amár*, to love; *perdér*, to loose; *pedir*, to ask, o beg.

When two Verbs come together without any nominative Case between them, then the latter shall be in the infinitive Mood, as *deseo aprender*, I desire to learn: And often times the infinitive supplies the nominative case, as *amár à Diós*, y *hacer bien al Próximo*, son los dos actos Principales de un Christiano, to love God, and do good to the Neighbour, are the two principal Actions of a Christian.

When *le*, *la*, *lo*, *les*, *las*, *los*, are added to the infinitive, then *r* is often changed into *l*, as *amálle* for *amárle*, *perdélle* for *perderle*, *decílle* for *decírle*, to love him, to loose him, to tell him. And when *me*, *te*, *se*, *nos*, *os*, &c. follow the infinitive immediately, then they are pronounced as monosyllables, as *decírle*, *decírselo*, &c. *

76 | The RUDIMENT S of
A general Scheme of the Termination of Verbs of the
three Conjugations in their simple Tenses.

Singular.			Plural.		
Persons	yo, tu, el I, thou, he do doft doth 1. o as a 2. } o es e 3. } did didft did pref. te.	nosotros we do ámos 2. émos 3. ímos did ábamos	vosotros ye do áis éis is did abádeis ábais	ellos, they do. an en en did ában	
Indicative Mood.	1. ába ábas ába 2. } ía ías ía 3. } have hast hath pret. imp. 1. é áste ó 2. } í íste ó 3. } shall or will have future. 1. } ré rás rá 2. } 3.	íamos have ámos ímos	íadeis have ásteis ísteis	ian have áron éron	
Imper.	do thou, 1. a tu, 2. e 3. e	let him do, e el	rémos	réis	rán
Persons	yo, I tu, el he thou, may mayft may or can 1. e es e 2. } a as a 3. } might mightft might or could 1. } ára áras ára 2. } áſle áſles áſſe 3. } ária arias ária imperf. tenses 1. éra éras éra 2. } éſſe éſſes éſſe 3. } ria rias ria shall shall shall or will have future 1. áre áres áre 2. } ére éres ére	nosotros, we may emos ámamos ámamos	vosotros, ye may may éis áis	ellos they night an an	
Potential Mood.	might 1. } áramos 2. } áſſemos 3. } ariamos éramos éſſemos riamos	might áradeis-árais áſſedeis-áſſeis ariades-áriaſis érades-érais éſſedeis-éſſeis riadeis-riais	might áran áſſen arian éran éſſen rián		
	shall áremos éremos	shall áredeis-áreis éredeis-éreis	shall áren éren		

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.

Pref. Tense and Prest. imp.	1. ár 2. ér 3. ír	to have	Gerund. éndo iéndo	ándo íendo	having.	par. pa. ido	ádo ido ido	had.
-----------------------------------	-------------------------	---------	--------------------------	---------------	---------	-----------------	-------------------	------

The Termination of Verbs of the three Conjugations in their compound Tenses.

*Singular.**Plural.*

Persons	yo tu el I, thou, he		nos. vos. ellas we, ye, they,
	I have, &c.		
1. {	hé, hás, {	ádo	hémos or havéis, han {
2. {	ha {	2	havémos {
3. {	3 ído		3
	I have, &c.		
1. {	húve, {	ádo	huvímos, huvísteis {
2. {	huviste, {	2	huvicón {
3. {	húvo {	3 ído	3
	I had, &c.		
1. {	havía, {	ádo	havíamos, { haviadeis, {
2. {	havías, {	2	haviais {
3. {	havía {	3 ído	3
	I am to		
1. {	he or tengo {	ár	hemos, havéis, han de {
2. {	has, há de {	ér	ér
3. {	ír {	ir	ir
	I must, or shall be obliged to		
1. {	havré, {	ár	hayrémos, havréis, {
2. {	havras, {	ér	ér
3. {	havrá de {	ir	ir
	I had, or I was to		
1. {	havía, {	ár	haviámos, { haviadeis, {
2. {	havías, {	ér	ér
3. {	havía de {	ir	ir

Indicative Mood.

Persons

Persons	<i>yo</i>	<i>tu</i>	<i>el</i>	<i>nosotros</i> , <i>vosotros</i> , <i>we</i> , <i>ye</i> ,	<i>los</i> <i>they</i>
	<i>I</i> , thou, he				
	<i>might or could</i>				
	<i>have, &c.</i>				
pre. per.	1. { háya,	2. { háyas,	3. { háya	ádo	hayámos, { hayádeis
				2. { ido	hayáis
				3. {	háyan
	<i>I bad, &c.</i>				
1 plusp.	1. { huvíéra,	2. { huvieras	3. { huvíéra	ádo	huvíeramos, { adeis,
				2. { ido	ais
				3. {	éran
	<i>I bad, &c.</i>				
2 plusp.	1. { huviéssse	2. { éstes	3. { ésse	ádo	huviésssemos, { edeis,
				2. { ido	eis
				3. {	éssien
	<i>shall or will</i>				
2 futur.	1. { huvíére,	2. { éres,	3. { ére	ádo	huvíéremos, { edeis,
				2. { ido	eis
				3. {	éren.

Infinitive.

Pret. perf.	1. {	havér	ádo	havi-	ádo
and	2. {		2. { ido	endo	2. { ido
Plusperf.	3. {		3. {	orha-	3. {
				vien-	ár
Future	1. {		ár	do	ér
	2. {	havér de	ér to have hereafter	de	ir
	3. {		ir		
Supine	1. {	à { ár			
	2. {	à { ér	to have		
	3. {	ir			

Observations on the Verbs.

THE regular and irregular Verbs, generally speaking, agree in this, that the first Futures of the Indicative Mood, and that of the Optative are always the same through out all the Conjugations, with this difference, that the first has the accent on the last syllable, and the second in the ante penultima.

When the first Preterperfect of the indicative is irregular, the first and second Preterimperfects, and the first Future of the Optative are irregular, as

dár, to give ;	tend ^o , to have, or hold,	dcir, to say.
Prest. Perf.	Pret. imperf. opt.	Future.
di, I give	diéra or diéssle,	diére, when I shall give. I might give.
túve, I had	tu viéra, or tu viéssle,	tu viére, when I shall that I might have.
dixe, I said	dixéra, or dixéssle	dixére, when I shall say. that I might say.

The third Preterimperfect of the Optative is always the same, and ends in *ria*, as *daria*, *tendria*, *diria* for *deciría*.

Note, Likewise, that generally the third person singular of the present tense of the Indicative Mood, is the second person of the Imperative, and the third of the Imperative is the first of the Optative, as *aquel áma*, he loveth; *áma tu*, love thou; *áme aquel*, let him love; *que yo áme*, that I may love.

There are few exceptions in the Imperative, as from *poner*, *tener*, *bacér*, *decir*, &c. say *pon tu* instead of *pone tu*, *ten tu* for *tiéne tu*, *báz* for *bace*, but this is in use, *dí tu*, or *dice tu*, &c.

Of the Participle.

A Participle is a part of a speech, it comes from the verb, and participates its force, that is, has the same signification, and governs the cause of the verb; it taketh of a Noun the gender, case, and declension; and of both, number and figure.

In Spanish there are four Participles, as in Latin,
viz. of the

Latin	Spaniſh.
Pref. Ten. in { <i>ans</i> as <i>amans</i> in <i>ante</i> 26 { <i>oyénte</i> , bearing, who <i>ens</i> <i>audiens</i> <i>ente</i> does bear. N. B.	<i>amante</i> , loving, who <i>loues</i> <i>oyénte</i> , bearing, who <i>does bear.</i>

N. B. That this Participle is likewise supplied in the Spanish language by the third person of the present tense of the indicative Mood, the relative *el* and *que*, as *el que áma*, he who does love; it governs generally in Spanish a genitive, as *amante de Dios*; and is of the gender of common, of three, *mas* *el amante, la amante, lo amante.*

	Latin		Spanish
Of the pret. or Passive	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{tus} \\ \text{or} \\ \text{xus} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{amatus} \\ \text{in} \\ \text{connexus} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{do} \\ \text{in to} \\ \text{xo, &c.} \end{array} \right.$
	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{sus} \\ \text{as} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{visus} \\ \text{visus} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{amado, loved,} \\ \text{visto, seen,} \\ \text{connexo, &c.} \end{array} \right.$

	Latin		Spanish
Of the future	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{rus} \\ \text{in} \\ \text{as} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{futurus} \\ \text{venturus} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{uro} \\ \text{in} \\ \text{éro, as} \\ \text{&c.} \end{array} \right.$

Note, That this Participle is supplied in Spanish by the auxiliar verb *havér*, or by *tenér*, with the particle *de*, and the infinitive of the verb, as *amaturus fueram, havía de amar*, I had to love; *tengo, or he de amar*, I am to love, &c.

Of Fut. in $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{dus} \\ \text{as} \end{array} \right.$ *Amandus*: But this in Spanish is supplied by the auxiliar Verbs *havér* and *sér*, the particle *de*, and the participle of the preter of the Verb, as *Amandus est, há de sér amado*, he is to be loved, &c.

Gerunds.

The Gerunds are terminated in Spanish in $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ando} \\ \text{endo} \end{array} \right.$ as *amando, loving,* *oyendo, bearing,*

And govern the case of the Verb, as *amando a Dios*, loving God: The Gerund of genitive is formed of the particle *de*, and the infinitive of the Verb thus, *de amar*, of loving; and that of accusative thus, *a amar*, to love.

SUPINES.

THREE are two Supines in *Spanish*, by way of circumlocution, one active, as à *amár*, to love; the other passive, as à *ser amado*, to be loved.

This, it is hoped, will be sufficient to bring the Reader into the knowledge of every thing required for the conjugation of verbs; as for the rest, we refer him to the third part of this Grammar, where under their proper heads he will find every thing necessary for the construction.

PERSONS.

THREE are also in Verbs three Persons in both numbers, *viz.*

Sing.	yo I tu, thou, el, or aquél he	as {	yo ámo, I love tu ámas, thou lovest aquel áma, he loveth.
-------	--------------------------------------	------	---

Plur.	nos, or nosótros, we vos, or vosótros, ye ellos, or aquéllos, they	as {	nosótros amámos, we love vosótros amáis, ye love aquéllos aman, they love.
-------	--	------	--

By the first person, we note, he who speaks; by the second, to whom we speak; and by the third, the person of whom we speak.

N. B. That the Spaniards very seldom make use of the second Person singular or plural, but when through a great familiarity among friends; when they speak to God, wife and husband to themselves, to children, or servants; instead thereof, when they speak to others, they make use of *Usted* in singular, or *Ustedes* in plural, or of *Vuestra Mercéd*, and *Vuestras Mercedes*, you, your Worship, your Merits, or Deservings; which are signs of the third person, of which they make use of in speaking: In writing they do always make use of

Observe here, that when an adjective comes after *Vuestra Merced*, it does not agree in the gender with *v. m^d.*, but with the person to whom we speak, or spoke of; when to a Man, thus *Vuestra Merced sea bien venido*, you are welcome: when to a Woman, thus, *Vuestra Merced sea bien venida*, you are welcome, and so in the plural. It can't be amiss, if at present I take notice of

The manner used by the Spaniards in saluting or complimenting one another.

THE Y make use of *Usted*, or *Vuestra Merced* in general for persons, or among persons below those of the Nobility and Gentry, as *como está v. m^d.*? or *como le va a v. m^d.*? or *como se bállia v. m^d.*? or as newly introduced by strangers, *como se porta v. m^d.*? how do you do, &c. Answer, *Mui bien pára servirle*, (or *pára servir a v. m^d.*) or *Bueno* (that is *ensalud*) *para que me mánde*, &c. *Caballero buenos días* (that is, *éste y otros mas*) *tenga v. m^d.*, Good morrow, Sir; *Buenas nöches tenga v. m^d.*, Good Night to you, Sir; it is used in Spanish *buen día tenga v. m^d.*, but not *Buena nöche* in singular.

Béso las Mános de v. m^d., I kiss your Hands; answer, *Y yo las (sup. Mános) de v. m^d.*

For *v. m^d me ága* (or *ágame*) *la Mercéd*, or *favór de ésto*, they say generally *v. m^d me la* (viz. *Mercéd*) *ága de ésto*, do me the Favour of this, or grant me the favour, &c.

We use to say *Buen día*, or *buenos días dé Dios a v. m^d.*, God give you a good Day, for good morrow, Sir, &c. as for the other ranks of persons, we say, to the King, *Vuestra Magestád*, Your Majesty; to the Pope, *Santidád*, *Beautitud*, *Santíssimo Pádre*, *Beatíssimo Pádre*, Holiness, Most Holy Father (Titles which should be given only to God); to a Prince

V. Altéza, your Highness; to a Cardinal, *Ex-Emi-*
nencia, your Eminency; to the Grandees, Dukes,
 Generals, and Ambassadors *V. Exceléncia*, your
 Excellency; to a Bishop, *Vuestra Señoría ilustríssima*,
 your illustrious Lordship; to Earls, Marquesses,
Vuestra Señoría. Note, That some use *Vuestra*, and
Vuestra promiscuously; but I am of opinion that
Vuestra is a word out of use, &c.

I observed, that some of the Nobility in Spain, when they speak to any Gentleman inferior in rank, never did make use of *Beso las Manos de v. m^d.*, but *Servidor de v. m^d.*; and so they say *v. m^d. sea bien venido*, or *bien venido sea el Señor Fulano*; *buenos días dé Dijo al Sr. Fulano*, &c. And when an inferior spoke to them he would be better off, if he said *Beso las Mános de V. Señoría*, than saying *Servidór de V. Señoría*; but at present this difference is almost left off, &c.

The preceding Spanish Words are abbreviated thus in writing: *V. Mgd*; *V. Santd*, or *Beatd*, *SS.* or *BB.* *Pádre*; *V. Alt*; *V. Em*; *V. Exc*; *V. S. il*; *V. S.*; *V. M^d*.

Of the Auxiliar Verbs.

AUXILIAR Verbs take their etymology of the Latin *Auxilium*, *Auxilio*, help, so called, because they are wanted, and help to the conjugation of other Verbs. There are auxiliar or helping Verbs in all the living languages, and in the Spanish there are more than in any other, as *podér*, *tenér*, *sólér*, *ir*, &c. without which we can't rightly explain the meaning of some tenses; but there are three Principal, viz. *havér* (instead of whom we do likewise use the Verb *tenér*) to have, *estár* and *sér*, to be; the two first serve for the active, neuter, and reciprocal Verbs; *havér* serves also for the passive Verbs in their compound

tenses, as in the Preterperfect, Pluperfect, &c. and the Verb *sér* serves for the passive Verbs. And as the other Verbs can't be conjugated without these, we think it proper to begin by

The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb Haver, To have.

The Indicative Mood. Present Tense.

Sing.

Yo hé,
Tu hás,
El or aquél há

I have
Thou hast
He bath

Plur.

Nosotros hémoxo
or havémos,
Vosotros havéis,
Ellos or aquéllos han,

We have
Ye have
They have

Preterimperfect.

Sing.

Havía,
Havías
Havía,

I had
Thou badſt
He had

Plur.

Havíamos
Havíades, or havíais
Havían

We had
Ye had
They had

First Preterperfect.

Sing.

Huve
Huviste
Huvo

I have had
Thou hast had
He hath had

Plur.

Huvimos,
Huvistes,
Huvieron,

We have had
Ye have had
They have had

Second Preterperfect.

Sing.

Yo hé
Tu hás
El há
Nosotros hémoxo
Vosotros havéis
Ellos han

Plur.

Havido,

I have had
Thou hast had
He hath had
We have had
Ye have had
They have had

The third Preterperfect thus :

Yo húve havido

Is in no use in Spanish.

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing. { Havía
Havías
Havía
Havíamos
Plur. { Havíadeis
Hayian

Havido,

{ I had bad
Thou hadst bad
He had bad
We had bad
Ye had bad
They had bad

First Future.

Sing. { Havré,
Havrás,
Havrá,
Havrémox
Plur. { Havréis
Havrán

I shall or will have
You shall or will have
He shall or will have
We shall or will have
Ye shall or will have
They shall or will have.

The other Futures are

Second, Yo hé de havér
Third, Havré de havér
Fourth, Havía de havér

I must have.
I shall be obliged to have
I was to have

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Háyas tu Háya aquéllo, or él	Have thou Have he, or let him have
Plur.	{ Hayámos nosótrios, Havéd vosótrios, Háyan aquéllos, or ellos	Have we, or let us have Have ye, or let ye have Have they, or let them have.

The Spaniards use, instead of this Imperative Mood, the Word *Ten*, of *Tengo*, I have or hold; which *Tengo* is often used for this Verb *He*.

This Imperative Mood *Ten*, of *Tengo*, so commonly used for *áyas*, *ayá*, is thus declined :

Sing.	{ Ten tu, Tenga el	Have, or hold thou Let him have or hold
Plur.	{ Tengámos nosótrios, Tenéd vosótrios Tengan ellos,	Let us have or hold Do ye have or hold Let them have or hold.

See this Verb among the Irregulars.

Note, The Optative Mood is us'd with these signs; as I have said, *Oxalá*, or *O si*, or *Plugiéſſe a Dios*. Would to God, I pray God, or God grant. The Potential like the *Latin*, with these signs, *may can*, *might*, *could*, *should*, or *ought*; both declined like the Subjunctive following.

Subjunctive Mood. Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	Háya,	{	If, or when I may have, &c.
Si, or	Háyas		
como	Háya		
<i>Plur.</i>	Hayámos	{	If, or when We may have, &c.
Si, or	Hayáis		
como	Háyan		

Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Si, or</i>	Huviéra, huviéſſe, havría	{	If, or when I might, could, or should have.
como	Huviéras, huviéſſes, havriás		
<i>Sing.</i>	Huviéra, huviéſſe, havría		
<i>Plur.</i>	Huviénos, huviéſſemos, havriám̄os	{	If, or when We might, could, or should have.
Si, or	Huviénis, huviéſſesis, havriásis		
como	Huviénen, huviéſſen, havrián.		

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Háya,	{	If, or when I had, or when I have had.
Si, or	Háyas		
como	Háya		
<i>Plur.</i>	Hayámos	{	If, or when We had, &c.
Si, or	Hayáis		
como	Háyan		

Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	{	If, or when I bad bad, &c.
Si, or	Huviéras, or huviéſſes		
como	Huviéra, or huviéſſe		
<i>Plur.</i>	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos	{	If, or when We bad bad, &c.
Si, or	Haviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis		
como	Huviéran, or huviéſſen		

First Future.

Sing.	Huviére		If, or when I shall have hereafter, &c.
Si, or	Huviéres		
como	Huviére		
Plur.	Huviéremos		
Si, or	Huviére is		
como	Huviéren		

Second Future.

Huviére		If, or when I shall have had, &c.
Huviéres		
Huviére		
Huviéremos		
Huviéreis		
Huviéren		

or otherwise havré havido.

Infinitive Mood.

Havér	To have.
Haver havido	To have had.
Haver de haver	To have hereafter.
Gerund. Haviendo,	Having.

Participles.

Pref. El que ha	The p. who hast
Pas. Havido	Ha.
Supine à havér	To base, in having, &c.

Note, That the Spanish Academy hath changed *havér* into *habér*; but as this innovation is against the practice both of ancient and modern Authors, I thought proper to conjugate and retain *bavér*.

The other Auxiliary Verbs Estár, and Ser, To be.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo estóí	Yo sóí	I am
	Tu estás	Tu éres	Thou art
	El está	El es	He is
	Nosotros estámós	Nosotros sómos	We are
Plur.	Vosotros estáis *	Vosotros sóis	Ye are
	Ellos están	Ellos son	They are

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Yo estábá Tu estábás El estábá Nosotros estábamos Vosotros estábais Ellos estábán	Yo éra Tu éras El éra Nosotros éramos Vosotros érais Ellos éran	I was Thou wert He was We were Ye were They were
Plur.			

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Estúve Estuviste Estúvo Estuvimos Estuvíteis Estuviéron	Fuí Fuiste Fué Fuimos Fuisteis Fuérón	I have been Thou hast been He hath been We have been Ye have been They have been
Plur.			

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	He, or húve estádo Has, or huviste estádo Ha, or húvo estádo Havémos, or huvímós estádo	He, or húve sido Has, or huviste sido Ha, or húvo sido Havémos, or huvímós sido	I have been, &c.
Plur.	Havéis, or huvísteis estádo Han, or huvieron estádo	Havéis, or huvísteis sido Han, or huvieron sido	

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havía estado Havías estado Havía estado Havíamos estado Haviádeis, or havíais estado	Havía sido Havías sido Havía sido Havíamos sido Haviáis, or havíadeis sido	I had been, &c.
Plur.	Havían estado	Havían sido	

First

First Future.

Sing.	{ Estaré Estarás Estará Estarémos Estaréis Estarán	{ Seré Serás Será Seremos Seréis Serán	I shall, or will be, &c.
-------	---	---	--------------------------

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Yo, or Tengo de estar Has de estar Ha de estar	{ He de ser Has de ser Ha de ser	I must be, &c.
Plur.	{ Hémos de estar Havéis de estar	{ Hémos de ser Havéis de ser	
	Han de estar	Han de ser	

Third Future.

Havré de estar, or sé I shall be obliged to be

Fourth Future.

Havia de estar, or sé I had to be, or I was to be.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Está tu Esté el	{ Se tu Séa el	{ Be thou Be he
Plur.	{ Estémos nosotros Estad vosotros Estén ellos	{ Seámos nosotros Sed vosotros Séan ellos	{ Let us be Be ye Let them be.

Subjunctive

Subjunctive Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Esté	Séa	If, or when I am, &c.
Si, or	Estés	Séas	
como	Esté	Séa	
Plur.	Estémos	Seámos	
Si, or	Estéis	Seáis	If, or when I am, &c.
como	Estén	Séan	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	Estuviéra estuviéssse, or estaría	Fuéra, fuéssse, sería	If, or when I was, &c.
Si, or	Estuviéras estuviéssses, or estariás	Fuéras, fuéssses, serías	
como	Estuviéra estuviéssse, or estaría	Fuéra, fuéssse, sería	
Plur.	Estuviéramos estuviéssse- mos, or estariémos	Fuéraramos, fuésssemos, seríamos	
Si, or	Estuviérais, is, estuvieretis,	Fuéradeis, fuéssedeis, feríadeis	If, or when I was, &c.
como	or estariáis, is	or estariadeis	
	Estuviéran estuviéssen, or estarián	Fuérán, fuéssen, se- rian	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	Haya estádo	Haya sido	If, or when I have been, &c
Si, or	Hayas estádo	Hayas sido	
como	Haya estádo	Haya sido	
Plur.	Hayámos estádo	Hayamos sido	
Si, or	Hayáis estádo	Hayáis sido	
como	Hayan estádo	Hayan sido	

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Huviéra, or huviéssse	éstádo	sido	If, or when I had been, &c.
Si, or	Huviéras, or huviéssses			
como	Huviéra, or huviéssse			
Plur.	Huviéramos, or huviésssemos			
Si, or	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	éstádo	sido	First
como	Huviérán, or huviéssen			

First

First Future.

Sing.	Estuviére	Fuére	If I shall, or I should be, or If, or when I had been, &c.
Si, or	Estuviéres	Fuéres	
como	Estuviére	Fuére	
Plur.	Estuviéremos	Fuéremos	
Si, or	Estuviéreis	Fuéredeis	
como	Estuviéren	Fuéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére	When I shall, or should have been, &c. or quando havré estido, or sído.
Si, or	Huviéres	
como	Huviére	
Plur.	Huviéremos	
Si, or	Huviéredes	
como	Huviéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Pres.	Estár,	Sér	To be.
Pret. perf.	Havér estado,	Havér sido,	To have been.
Future.	Havér de estar,	Havér de ser,	To be hereafter.
Gerund.	Estando, siendo		Being.

Participles.

Pres.	El que esta, or es,	The Person who is.
Pas.	Estádo, Sido,	Been.
Sup.	à estar, à ser	To be in being.

The Optative is the same as the Subjunctive.

BOOTH these Verbs *Estár* and *Sér* signify *To be*, the English having no word to distinguish between them, and yet they cannot be indifferently used, there being a considerable difference between them, which is, that *Ser* signifies the proper and inseparable Essence of a Thing, denoting the Quality, or Quantity, as *Ser bueno*, to be good; *Ser malo*, to be wicked; *Ser grande*, to be big; *Ser pequeño*, to be little, &c. But *Estár* denotes Place, or some adjunct

adjunct Quality, as *Estar en casa*, to be at home; *Estar bueno*, to be well; *Estar malo*, or *enfermo*, to be sick. For in enquiring after a Man's Health, the Spaniards make use of the word *Estar*, as *como estais?* How do you? The Answer is, *Estoy bueno*, or *malgo.* I am well or ill. Though sometimes the Answer is without the Verb, saying only, *bueno*; or *malo*, well or sick; or placing the Verb after the Adjective, as *bueno estoy*, I am well. Where it is to be observed that *bueno* and *malo*, do not signify good and bad, as they do upon other occasions, but well or ill. In short, *estar*, is us'd to express any thing that concerns the affections, or passions of the Soul, as *estoy triste*, I am melancholy, *estoy alegra*, I am merry. So that as has been said *ser* must be used to denote the inseparable Essence, or Being, whereas *estar* implies Accidents, as *El vestido es bueno*, *pero está mal hecho*, the Cloaths are good, but they are ill made; where we see the essential Being of the Thing itself under the word *ser*, or *es*, and the accidental fault of its being ill made under the word *estar*. *Ser* likewise is used to express the condition, or temper of a Man in its nature, as *este hombre es colérico de condicion*, this Man is of a colerick disposition; and *estar* express the fit or action, as *este hombre está colérico*, this Man is actually angry, or is in a colerick fit.

Example of the first Conjugation of Verbs regular in ar, as Revelar, to reveal, or discover.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo revelo	I reveal.
	Tu revelas.	Thou, or you reveal.
	El revela	He reveals.
	Nosotros revelamos	We reveal.
Plur.	Vos revelais	Ye reveal.
	Ellos revelan	They reveal.

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	<i>{ Yo revelába Tu revelábas El revelába</i>	<i>I did reveal, or I was revealing. You did reveal. He did reveal.</i>
Plur.	<i>{ Nosotros revelábamos Vosotros revelábadeis, or revelábais Ellos revelában</i>	<i>We did reveal. Ye did reveal. They did reveal.</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	<i>{ Revelé Reveláste Reveló</i>	<i>I revealed. You revealed. He revealed.</i>
Plur.	<i>{ Revelámos Revelásteis Revelaron</i>	<i>We revealed. Ye revealed. They revealed.</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	<i>{ He, or húve Has, or huviste Ha, or húvo</i>	<i>{ Revelado,</i>	<i>I have revealed</i>
	<i>Havémos, or huvimos</i>		<i>Thou hast revealed</i>
Plur.	<i>Havéis, or huvisteis</i>		<i>He hath revealed</i>
	<i>Han, or huvieron</i>		<i>We have revealed</i>
			<i>Ye have revealed</i>
			<i>They have revealed.</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	<i>{ Havia Havías Havia Haviamos</i>	<i>{ Revelado,</i>	<i>I had revealed</i>
Plur.	<i>Haviadeis Havian</i>		<i>Thou hadst revealed</i>
			<i>He had revealed</i>
			<i>We had revealed</i>
			<i>Ye had revealed</i>
			<i>They had revealed.</i>

First Future.

Sing.	{ Revelaré, Revelarás, Revelará,	I shall or will reveal You shall or will reveal He shall or will reveal
Plur.	{ Revelarémos, Revelaréis, Revelarán,	We shall or will reveal Ye shall or will reveal They shall or will reveal.

Second Future.

Sing.	{ He, or téngo de revelár, Has de revelár, Ha de revelár,	{ I am to or must reveal, &c.
Plur.	Hémos, or havémos de re-	
	velár,	
Plur.	Havéis de revelár, Han de revelár,	

Third Future.

Sing.	{ Havré Havrás Havrá	{ de Revelár	{ I shall be obliged to reveal, &c.
Plur.	Havrémos	{ de Revelár	
Plur.	Havréis Havrán	{ de Revelár	

Fourth Future.

Sing.	{ Havía Havías Havía	{ de Revelár	{ I had, or I was to reveal, &c.
Plur.	Havíamos	{ de Revelár	
	Haviádeis Havían	{ de Revelár	

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Révéla tu, Révéle él,	Do you reveal, or reveal thou Let him reveal.
-------	----------------------------	--

Plur.

Plur.	Revelémos nosótros, Revelád vosótros, Revélen éllos,	<i>Let us reveal.</i> <i>Do ye reveal, or let ye reveal.</i> <i>Let them reveal.</i>
-------	--	--

The Optative and Subjunctive Moods, with their Signs Si, Cómo, Oxalá, Aunqué.

If, When, would God, God Grant.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo revelé Tu revelés El revelé Nosótros revelémos Vosótros reveléis Ellos revélen,	<i>When, or God grant, &c.</i> <i>I reveal, &c.</i>
Plur.		

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Revelára, revelásse, revelaría Reveláras, revelásses, revelarías Revelára, revelásse, revelaría	<i>When, or would to God I did reveal, &c.</i>
Plur.	Reveláramos, revelássemos, revelariámos Reveláradeis, revelássedeis, revelariádeis Reveláran, revelássen, revelarián	

Three Preterperfect.

Sing.	Haya, Hayas, Haya, Hayámos	<i>Revelado,</i> <i>When, or would to God, &c.</i> <i>I have reveal, &c.</i>
Plur.	Hayáis Hayan	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	Huviéra, or huviéſſe Huviéras, or huviéſſes Huviéra, or huviéſſe Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos	Reveládo,	When or would to God, &c. I had reveal- ed, &c.
Plur.	Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis Huviéran, or huviéſſen		

First Future.

Sing.	Reveláre, Reveláres, Reveláre, Reveláremos	When or would to God, &c. I shall or will reveal, &c.
Plur.	Reveláredeis Reveláren,	

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére Huviéres Huviére	Reveládo,	When or would to God, &c. I shall or will have re- vealed, &c.
Plur.	Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren		

or otherwise havré revelado.

Infinitive Mood.

Revelár,

To reveal.

Preterperfect.

Havér revelado

To have revealed.

Future.

Havér, or esperár de revelár

To reveal hereafter.

Gerund.

Gerund.

Revelando,

Revealing.

Supine of the Active Signification,

A revelás,

To be about to reveal.

Supine of the Passive Signification,

A ser revelado,

To be revealed.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice,

Revelante, or el que revéla,

Revealing.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice,

Revelado,

Revealed.

All regular Verbs that have their Infinitive in *ar*, are conjugated in all Points like this. The Irregular shall be treated of, after the following List of regular Verbs in *ar*, above spoken of.

Regular Verbs in *ar*.

L	Amár, to call. Ayunár, to fast. Comprár, to buy. Recompensár, to requite. Apartár, to set aside. Separár, to separate. Apelár, to appeal. Acomodár, to adjust. Peleár, to fight. Cantár, to sing. Llorár, to weep.
----------	--

Aprovechár, to profit. Cenár, to sup. Hallár, to find. Topár, to find. Ganár, to gain. Contestár, to contest. Despojář, to strip. Arrastrár, to drag. Fiár, to trust. Pagár, to pay. Saqueár, to plunder.

- Ameñár, to threaten.
 Injuriar, to revile.
 Afrentár, to affront.
 Aventurár, to venture.
 Matár, to kill.
 Curár, to cure, or heal.
 Sanár, to heal, or recover health.
 Amedrantár, to put into fear.
 Espantár, to frighten.
 Manchár, to spot, or stain.
 Alzár, to take up.
 Levantár, to raise.
 Sudár, to sweat.
 Remediár, to remedy.
 Cortár, to cut.
 Atár, to tyse.
 Azotár, to whip.
 Estimár, to esteem.
 Borrár, to blot out.
 Lavár, to wash.
 Nadár, to swim.
 Hurtár, to steal.
 Robár, to rob, to steal.
 Besár, to kiss.
 Cabár, to dig.
 Cazár, to hunt.
 Hechár vino, o agua, to pour out wine, or water.
 Hechár de bever, to fill out drink.
 Hechár de cása, to turn out of doors.
 Hechár úna ayuda, to give a chyfer.
 Despavilár la vela, to snuff the candle.
 Despavilár úna cosa, to make a thing vanish.
 Despavilár los ójos, to awake from sleep.
 Alumbrár, to light.
 Tomár, to take.
 Quitár, to remove, or to take away.
 Alabár, to praise.
 Alquilár, to hire.
 Perdonár, to pardon.
 Caminár, to travel.
 Reculár, to draw back.
 Adelantár, to forward.
 Rehusár, to refuse.
- Mandár, to command.
 Dissimulár, to dissemble.
 Engañár, to deceive.
 Desengañosár, to undeceive.
 Bailár, to dance.
 Danzár, to dance.
 Domár, to tame.
 Lisongeár, to flatter.
 Martyrizár, to torment.
 Encantár, to enchant.
 Desnudár, to strip.
 Reposár, to pose.
 Cansár, to tire.
 Animár, to encourage.
 Jurár, to swear.
 Rezár, to pray.
 Esterñudár, to sneeze.
 Callár, to be silent.
 Passeár, to walk.
 Alejár, to set at a distance.
 Condenár, to condemn.
 Dexár, to leave.
 Olvidár, to forget.
 Porfiár, to contend.
 Gastár, to spend.
 Acusár, to accuse.
 Aparejar, to make ready.
 Despreciár, to despise.
 Menospreciár, to undervalue.
 Maltratár, to misuse.
 Empeñár, to engage.
 Acabár, to finish.
 Amparár, to protect.
 Defampiar, to forsake.
 Mirár, to look.
 Declarár, to declare.
 Procurár, to procure.
 Entrár, to come in.
 Criár, to breed.
 Embiár, to send.
 Apeár, to alight.
 Retirár, to retire.
 Abordár, to come to shore.
 Arrebatar, to snatch.
 Arrancár, to tear up.
 Desarraigár, to root up.
 Amansár, to tame.
 Presentár, to present.
- Representár,

Representár, to represent.	Conformár, to conform.
Desafiár, to challenge.	Visitár, to visit.
Ayudár, to help.	Confrontár, to confront.
Disfamár, to defame.	Comparár, to compare.
Honrár, to honour.	Adorár, to adore.
Tapár, to cover.	Tartamudeár, to stammer.
Sitiár, to besiege.	Galanteár, to court.
Enojár, to anger.	Escaramuzár, to skirmish.
Usár, to use.	Disparár, to discharge.
Casár, to marry.	Enfanchár, to evict.
Amár, to love.	Bambaleár, to totter.

It would be endless to pretend to mention all the Verbs of this sort, and therefore these may suffice; but we may now proceed to the irregular Verbs of this Conjugation, which are many, and must be particularly taken notice of.

Here follow the irregular Verbs, which being under no certain Rule, must all be particularly conjugated.

The first Conjugation of Verbs irregular in ar.

Dar, To give.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo dío	I give
	Tu das	You give
	El da	He gives
	Nosotros dámos	We give
Plur.	Vosotros dáis	Ye give
	Ellos dan	They give,

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Dábá Dábás Dábá Dábamos	I did give, or I was giving You did give He did give We did give
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Dábadeis, or dábaís Dábán	Ye did give They did give

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Dí Diste Dió	I gave You gave He gave
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Dimos Dísteis Diéron	We gave Ye gave They gave

Second and Third Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Yo he, or húve dádo Tu has, or huviste dádo El ha, or húvo dádo	I have given You have given He has given
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hémos, or huyímos dádo Haveís, or huvísteis dádo Han, or huvieron dado	We have given Ye have given They have given.

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Havía Havías Havía Havíamos	{ Dádo,	{ I had given, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	Haviádeis Havían		

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Dare, Darás, Dará, Darémos,	{ If shall, or will give, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	Dareís, Darán,	

Second

Second Future.

Sing.	{ He, or Téhgo de dár Has de dár Ha de dár Havémos de dár Havéis de dár Han de dár	}	I am to, or must give, &c.
Plur.			

Third Future.

Sing.	{ Havré Havrás Havrá Havrémos	{ De dár,	I shall be obliged to give, &c.
Plur.	{ Havréis Havrán		

Fourth Future, alias a Tense of Circumlocution.

Sing.	{ Havía Havías	{ De dár,	I had to give, or I was to give, &c.
	{ Havía Havíamos		
Plur.	{ Havíadeis Havían		

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Da tu, De el,	Give thou	
	{ Démos nosóotros,	Let him give	
Plur.	{ Dád vosotros, Den éllos,	Let us give	
		Give ye	
		Let them give.	

Subjunctive and Optative Moods, with the Signs.

*Como, Aunqué, Oxalá,
When, God grant, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Yo de, Tu des, El de, Démos,	{ When or God grant I do give, &c.
Plur.	{ Déis, Dén,	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{ Diéra, diéssé, daría Diéras, diésses, darías Diéra, diéssé, daría	{ When; or God grant I did give, or when I might, could, or should give.
Plur.	{ Diéramos, diéssemos, daríamos Diéradeis, or diérais, diéadéis, or dariais, diéssedéis, or diésséis	
	Diéran, diéssen, darian	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Haya, Hayas, Haya, Hayámos	{ Dádo, When, or would to God, &c. I had given, or when I have given, &c.
Plur.	{ Hayáis Hayan	

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviéssé Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviéssé	{ Dádo, When, or would to God I had given, &c.
Plur.	{ Huviéramos, or huviéssemos Huviéradeis, or huviéssédeis Huviéran, or huviéssen	

First

First Future.

Sing.	{ Diére Diéres Diére Diéremos	When, or God grant I shall give, &c.
	{ Diéredeis	
Plur.	Diéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, y havré Huviéres Huviére Huviéremos	Dádo, { When, or God grant I shall or will give, &c.
	{ Huviéredes	
Plur.	Huviéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Dar

To give.

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér dádo

To have given

Future.

Havér de dár

To give hereafter

Gerund.

Dándo

Giving

Participle Passive.

Dádo

Given

Participle of the Present Tense, Active Voice,

● *Dante, or el que da* *Giving*

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, or espera de dar *To give hereafter*

First Supine.

A Dár *To be about to give*

Second Supine.

A ser Dado *To be given*

The next Irregular Verb of this Conjugation is,

Almorzár, To breakfast.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Almuérzo Almuérzas Almuérza	<i>I breakfast</i>
		<i>You breakfast</i>
		<i>He breakfasts</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Almorzámos. Almorzáis Almuérzan	<i>We breakfast</i>
		<i>Ye breakfast</i>
		<i>They breakfast</i>

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Almorzába Almorzábas Almorzába	<i>I did breakfast, or I was breakfasting</i>
		<i>You did breakfast</i>
		<i>He did breakfast</i>

Plur.

<i>Plur.</i>	Almorzábamos Almorzábais, or Almorzábadeis Almorzában	<i>We did breakfast</i> <i>Ye did breakfast</i> <i>They did breakfast</i>
--------------	--	---

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Almorzé Almorzalé. Almorzo Almorzámos	<i>I have breakfasted</i> <i>You have breakfasted</i> <i>He has breakfasted</i> <i>We have breakfasted</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Almorzáteis Almorzaron	<i>Ye have breakfasted</i> <i>They have breakfasted</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	He, or húve almorzádo Has, or huviste almorzádo Ha, or húvo almorzádo Hémos, havémos, or huvímos almorzádo	<i>I have breakfasted</i> <i>You have breakfasted</i> <i>He has breakfasted</i> <i>We have breakfasted</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Havéis, or huvísteis almorzádo Han, or huviéron almorzádo	<i>Ye have breakfasted</i> <i>They have breakfasted</i>

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Havía almorzádo Havías almorzádo Havía almorzádo Haviámos almorzádo	<i>I had breakfasted</i> <i>You had breakfasted</i> <i>He had breakfasted</i> <i>We had breakfasted</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Haviadéis almorzádo Hayán almorzádo	<i>Ye had breakfasted</i> <i>They had breakfasted</i>

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	Almorzaré Almorzarás Almorzará Almorzarémos	<i>I will, or shall breakfast,</i> <i>&c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Almorzaréis Almorzarán	

Second

Second Future.

Sing.	{ He, or téngo de almorzár Has de almorzár Ha de almorzár Hémos, or havémos de almorzár	I am to, or must breakfast, &c.
Plur.	{ Havéis de almorzár Han de almorzár	
	Havré de almorzár	I shall be obliged to breakfast
	Havía de almorzár	I was to breakf.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Almuérza Almuérze	Do you breakfast
	{ Almorzémos	Let him breakfast
Plur.	{ Almorzád Almuérzen	Let us breakfast
		Do ye breakfast
		Let them breakfast

The Optative and Subjunctive Moods, with the Signs Si, Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.

If, When, would God, God grant.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Yo almuérm. Tu almuérzes El almuérze Aimorzémos	If, When, would to God I breakfast, &c.
Plur.	{ Almorzeis Almuérzen	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{ Almorzára, almorzásse, almorzaría Almorzáras, almorzásses, almorzarías	If, when, would to God I did breakfast, &c.
	Almorzára, almorzásse, almorzaría	
	Almorzáramos, almorzássemos, almorzariámos	
Plur.	Almorzáradeis, almorzássedeis, almorzariádeis	
	Almorzáran, almorzásten, almorzarián	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Háya Háyas	Almorzádo, { If, when, would to God I Háya Hayámos have breakfasted, &c.
	Háya	
	Hayámos	
Plur.	Hayáis	
	Háyan	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviéisse Huviéras, or huviéisses	Almorzádo, { If, when, would to Huviéra, or huviéisse Huviéramos, or huviéssemos Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis Huviéran, or huviésten	If, when, would to God I had break- fasted, &c.
	Huviéra, or huviéisse		
	Huviéramos, or huviéssemos		
Plur.	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis		
	Huviéran, or huviésten		

First Future.

Sing.	{ Almorzáre Almorzátes	{ If, when, would to God I shall Almorzáre Almorzáremos
	Almorzáre	
	Almorzáremos	
Plur.	Almorzáredeis	
	Almorzáren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or havié Huviéres	Almorzádo, { If, when, God Huviére Huviéremos grant all or Huviéredes Huviéren will have' break- fasted, &c.
	Huviére	
	Huviéremos	
Plur.	Huviéredes	
	Huviéren	

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood,

Present.

Almorzár

To breakfast

Preterperfect.

Havér almorzádo

To have breakfasted.

Future.

Havér, or esperár de almorzár,

To be to breakfast hereafter

Gerund.

Almorzándo

breakfasting

First Supine.

à Almorzár

To be about breakfasting

Second Supine.

à ser almorzádo

Having breakfasted

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que almuérza

Breakfasting

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Almorzádo

*Breakfasted, &c.**The*

The following Irregular Verbs of the first Conjugation, terminating in ar, are all conjugated after the same manner as Almorzár, changing the Penultima o into ue in the three Persons Singular, and the third of the Plural in all the Present Tenses.

Injinitive.

Contár, to count
Desollár, to flea
Resollár, to breath
Acordár, to remember
Moltrár, to show
Afiolár, to destroy
Volár, to fly
Apostár, to wager
Hollár, to trample on
Soltár, to let loose
Forzárá, to force
Provar, to try, or prove
Sonár, to sound
Atronár, to thunder
Degollár, to behead
Consolár, to comfort
Encontrár, to meet

Present.

Cuénto
Desuéllo
Resuéllo
Acuéndo
Muéstro
Assuéllo
Uuélo
Apuésto
Huéllo
Suélto
Fuérzo
Pruévo
Suéno
Atruéno
Deguéllo
Comuéllo
Encuéntro

Preterperfect.

Conté
Desollé
Resollé
Acordé
Moftré
Afiolé
Volé
Aposté
Hollé
Solte
Forcé
Prove
Soné
Atroné
Degollé
Console
Encontré.

But jugár to play, changes u into ue.

All the Verbs ending in gar have the first person of the preterperfect of the indicative in que; as likewise the third of the singular, the first and last of the plural of the imperative, and in all the persons of the present tense of the optative, as.

Infinit. Pres. Indic. Pret. pe. Imperative, Pres. Optat.

Colgar, to hang	Cuelgo	Colgué	Cuégue aquél	que yo Cuélgue
Rogár, to intreat	Ruégo	Rogué	Ruégue el	que Ruegue
Pagár, to pay	Págo	Pagué	Págue el	que yo Págue
Holgár to be idle	Huélgo	Holgué	Huélgue el	que yo Huélgue
Regár; to water	Riégo	Régue	Riégue el	que yo Ríegue &c.

The Verbs in *cár* change *car* in *que* in the first person of the preterperfect of the indicative; the third singular, the first and last of the plural in the imperative, and in all the persons of the present tense of the optative, as

Infinit. Pref. Indic. Pret. p. Imperative, Pref. Optative.

Tocár, <i>to touch,</i>	tóco	toqué	tóqué el	que yo toqué
<i>so feel.</i>				
Trocár, <i>to change</i>	truéco	troqué	truéque el	que yo truéque, &c.

The following Verbs change the penultima *e* into *ie* in all the persons singular, and the third of the plural of the present tense of the indicative, imperative, and optative, as

Infinit. Pref. Indic. Imperative, Present Optative.

Apretár, <i>to squeeze,</i>	apriéto	apriéta tu	que yo apriete
Emmendárá, <i>to mind</i>	emmiéndo.	emmiénda tu	que yo emmiénde
Empezárá, <i>to begin</i>	empieza	empiéza tu	que yo empiéce
Cerrárá, <i>to shut</i>	Ciérra	Cierra tu	que yo ciérre
Enterrárá, <i>to bury</i>	entiérro	entiérra tu	que yo entiérrre
Desterrárá, <i>to banish</i>	destiérra	destiérra tu	que yo destiérrre
Confessárá, <i>to confess</i>	confiésso	confiéssa tu	que yo confiéssse

And several other more, whose irregularity is only in the following Tenses, as

Tentár, to feel.

Present Indicative.

Sing. { Tiénto, Tiéntas Tiénta }	I feel, &c.	Plur. { Tentámos Tentáis Tiéntan }
--	-------------	--

Imperative.

Imperative.

Sing.	Tienta tu, Tiente el	Feel thou	Plur.	Tentemos nosóotros Tentád vosotros Tienten aquéllos
-------	-------------------------	-----------	-------	---

Present Optative.

Sing.	Yotiente, that I may Tientes Tiénte	(feel)	Plur.	Tentémos Tentéis Tíenten <i>otherwise they are conjugated as Revelár.</i>
-------	---	--------	-------	--

The Verb *Andár*, to go, or to go about, has the preterperfect of the indicative irregular; and generally when such tense is irregular, the first and the second Preterimperfects, and the first Future of the Optative are irregular, as

Andúve	Si, Anduviéra Anduviéssse	qu. anduviére,
Anduviste	Anduvíeras, Anduviéssses	Anduvières
Andúvo	Anduvíera, Anduviéssse	Anduvière
Anduvímos	Anduvíeramos, Anduviésssemos	anduviéremos
Anduvísteis,	Anduvíeradeis, Anduvíeadeis	anduvíerdeis
Anduvíeron	Anduvíeran, Anduviésssen	anduvíeren

in other Tenses is conjugated as Revelár.

Of the Verbs Passive

Of the First Conjugation.

VERBS Passive are formed in Spanish from the Active, by the auxiliary Verb, and the Participle Passive of the Preterperfect Tense, following always the Moods and Tenses of the Verb *Sér*, as

Sér amado,

to be beloved.

Present

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Sing. { *sói*
éres
es } amádo { *I am beloved*
Thou are beloved
He is beloved

Plur. { *somos*
sóis
son } amádos { *We are beloved*
Ye are beloved
They are beloved

Imperfect Tense.

Sing. { *éra*
éras
éra } amádo { *I was beloved*
Thou was beloved
He was beloved

Plur. { *éramos*
éradeis
éran } amádos { *We were beloved*
Ye were beloved
They were beloved

Preterperfect.

Sing. { *úñor he sido*
fuiñe, or has sido
fué, or ha sido } amádo { *I have been beloved*
Thou has been beloved
He bath been beloved

Plur. { *fuímos, or hémos sido*
fuiñeis, or havéis sido
fuéron, or han sido } amádos { *We have been beloved*
Ye have been beloved
They have been beloved

Preterpluperfect.

Sing. { *Havía sido*
Havías sido
Havía sido } amádo { *I had been beloved*
Thou hadst been beloved
He had been beloved

Plur. { *Havíamos sido*
Haviadeis sido
Havian sido } amádos { *We had been beloved*
Ye had been beloved
They had been beloved

Future.

Seré amado, &c.

I shall be beloved

And so throughout other Moods and Tenses.

Of

Of the Reciprocal Verbs.

THIS reciprocal Verbs are all terminated in *se* in the infinitive Mood, as *Acostárse* to lie down, or to grow near, or to come near; *Levantárse*, to rise up; *Librárse*, to discharge one's self, to make one's self free, &c. and are conjugated thus:

Adelantárse, to go before, to rise up to a Dignity or to Preferment.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Me adelanto Te adelantas Se adelanta	I go before, &c.
	{ Nos adelantámos	
Plur.	{ Vos, or os adelantáis Se adelántan	
Plur.	{ Me adelantábamos	I did go before, &c.
	{ Te adelantábás Se adelantábába	
Sing.	{ Nos adelantábamos	I went before.
	{ Vos, or os adelantábadeis Se adelantában	

Imperfect.

Sing.	{ Me adelantábaba Te adelantábabas Se adelantábaba	I did go before, &c.
	{ Nos adelantábabamos	
Plur.	{ Vos, or os adelantábadeis Se adelantában	
Plur.	{ Me adelantábamos	I went before.
	{ Te adelantábaste Se adelantó	
Sing.	{ Nos adelantámos	
	{ Vos, or os adelantásteis Se adelantáron	

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Me adelanté Te adelantáste	I went before.
	{ Se adelantó	
	{ Nos adelantámos	
Plur.	{ Vos, or os adelantásteis	I went before.
	{ Se adelantáron	

I

Second

Second Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Me he Te has Se ha Nos hemos Vos, or os haveís Se han	{ Adelantado	{ <i>I have gone before.</i>
--------------	--	--------------	------------------------------

And so in all the Tenses and Moods, but in the Imperative thus:

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Adelántate tu Adelántese el	{	<i>Go thou before, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Adelantemosnos nosotros Adelantados vosotros	{	
	Adelántense aquellos.	{	

The Verb *Pesárse*, to be sorry, is conjugated thus:

Indicative.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Pésame, or à mí mepésá, Pésate, or à ti te péfa, Pérale, or à el le péfa,	{	<i>I am sorry</i>
	Pésanos, or à nosotros nos péfa,	{	<i>Thou art sorry</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Péfaos, or à vosotros os péfa,	{	<i>He is sorry</i>
	Péfales, or à ellos les péfa,	{	<i>We are sorry</i>
		{	<i>Ye are sorry</i>
		{	<i>They are sorry.</i>

And so throughout all other Tenses; but in the Imperative Mood thus:

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Pésete, Pésele,	{	<i>Be thou sorry</i>
	Pésenos,	{	<i>Let him be sorry</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Péseos,	{	<i>Let us be sorry</i>
	Péseles,	{	<i>Be ye sorry</i>
		{	<i>Let them be sorry</i>

Of

Of Verbs Impersonals belonging to the first Conjugation.

THE Spanish Impersonals, like the Latin, want the first and second Persons, and are declined only in the third Person, throughout all Moods and Tenses.

Of the Impersonals some are Active, and some Passive.
The Active are conjugated thus:

Nevár

To snow.

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Niéva,

It snow.

Imperfect.

Nevába,

It did snow.

First Preterperfect.

Nevó,

It snowed.

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Há, or húvo nevádo,

It hath snowed.

Plusperfect.

Haviá nevádo,

It had snowed.

Future.

Nevará,
Que niéve.
Será buénō que niéve,
Si nevára, nevásse, or nevaría,
Quando háya nevado,
Si huviéra, or huviéssse nevado,
Quando nevare,
Nevando,
Los Campos están nevados,
Niéve, a Noun,

It will snow.
Let it snow.
It will be good if that it snow.
If it would snow.
When it hath snowed.
If it had snowed.
When it shall snow.
Snowing.
The Fields are cover'd with snow.
The snow.

In this manner are conjugated the following
Verbs :

Atronár, or tronár, to thunder
Granizar, or apedréar, to hail
Helir, to freeze
Relampageár, to lighten
Ahi mår, to smoak
Coifrár, to be plain; or clear
Importár, to import, to be convenient

The passive Impersonals are conjugated with the
Particle *se* before or after the Verb, as

Se cuénta, *It is said, it is told, it is related, it is reported.*
Se contába, *It was said.*
Se contó
Se ha, or húvo contado } *It hath been said.*
Se havía contado, *It had been said.*
Se centará, *It will be said.*

And so throughout all other Tenses and Moods.

N. B. That all the Verbs regular, or irregular, personals, or impersonals, except the regular passive, may be otherwise conjugated by the auxiliary Verb *Estar*, and the Gerund of the Verb, through all the Tenses and Moods, as

Present.

Present. Indicative.

Sing.	amó, or estoi anaando,	I love, or I am loving, &c.
	ámas, or estás amando	
	áma, or está amando	
	amámos, or estámós amando	
Plur.	amáis, or estáis amando	
	áman, or están amando	

Imperfect.

Amába, or estába amando, I was loving

Perfect.

Amé, or estuve amando,	Did love, &c.
Llámo, or estói llamando	I call, or am calling
Háblo, or estói hablando,	I speak, or am speaking. &c.

The same is to be observed in all the Conjugations.

It must be observed here, that there are some Nouns called Verbals, for their being derived from the Verbs; in Latin those are terminated generally in *bilis*, in *tor*, and *ix*, and in Spanish in *ble*, *dor*, and *iz*: as

Latin.		Spanish.
<i>bilis</i>	Amabilis	
<i>tor</i>	Amator	<i>ble</i>
<i>ix</i>	Amatrix	<i>dor</i>
		<i>iz</i>
		Amable
		Amadór
		Amatriz, or amadóra.

But note, That there are some Spanish Verbs which are defectives in this particular, as well as some Latin Verbs.

Of Verbs Regular of the second Conju-
gation, in er.

Respondér,

To answer.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Respón-do, Respón-de-s, Respón-de, Respón-de-mos, Respón-de-is, Respón-de-n,	I answer You answer He answers We answer Ye answer They answer
Plur.		

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Respondia, Respondías, Respondía, Respondíamos, Respondíadeis, Respondían,	I did answer, or I was answering. You did answer He did answer We did answer Ye did answer They did answer
Plur.		

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Respondí, Respondíste, Respondió, Respondímos, Respondísteis, Respondieron,	I answered You answered He answered We answered Ye answered They answered
Plur.		

Second

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ He, or húve Ha, or huvisté Ha, or húvo Hémos, havémos, or huvimos	{ Respondido,	I have answered You have answered He has answered We have answered
Plur.	{ Havéis, or huvistei Han, or huvieron		Ye have answered They have answered

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Havia Havías Havía Havíamos	{ Respondido,	I had answered, &c.
Plur.	{ Haviadeis Havian		

First Future.

Sing.	{ Responderé, Responderás, Responderá, Responderémos,	{	I shall, or will answer, &c.
Plur.	{ Responderéis, Responderán,		

Second Future.

Sing.	{ He, or Tengo de responder, Has de responder	{	I am, to or must an-
	{ Ha de responder, Hémos, or havémos de responder		swer, &c.
Plur.	{ Havéis de responder, Han de responder,		

Third Future.

Sing. Haveré de responder, I shall be oblig'd to answer.

Fourth Future.

Sing. Havía de responder,

I was to answer.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Respónde tu, Respónda el, Respondámos ns ^s	Do you answer, or answer thou Let him answer Let us answer.
Plur.	{ Respondé v ^s Respondan ellos	Do ye answer & let you answer Let them answer

Subjunctive and Optative Moods, with the Signs.

{ Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,
When, God grant, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Respónda, Réspondás, Respónda, Respondámos,	{ When, or God grant I do answer, &c.
Plur.	{ Respondáis Respondan,	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{ Respondiéra, respondiéssle, or responderia, Respondíeras, respondiéssles, or responderias, Respondiéra, respondiéssle, or responderia	{ When, or God grant I did answer, &c.
	Respondíeramos, respondiéssledeis, or responderiamos	
	Respondíerais, or respondiésssemos, or responderiaideis	
Plur.	Respondíeran, respondiéssen, or responderían.	

Preter-

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Háya Háyas Háya Hayámos	{	Respondido,	{ When, or would to God, &c. I have answered, &c.
Plur.	{ Hayáis Háyan	.		

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviéisse Huviéras, or huviéisses	{	Respon-	{ When, or
	{ Huviéra, or huviéisse	.	dido,	would to
	{ Huviéramos, or huviéssemos	.		God I had
	{ Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	.		answered,
Plur.	Huviéran, or huviéssen	.		&c.

First Future.

Sing.	{ Respondiére, Respondiéres,	{	When, or God grant I shall,
	{ Respondiére, Respondiéremos,	.	or will answer, &c.
Plur.	{ Respondiéredeis, Respondiéren	.	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or havré Huviéreas,	{	When, or God grant
	{ Huviéra	.	I shall or will
	{ Huviéremos	.	have answered,
Plur.	{ Huviéradeis Huviéren	.	&c.

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Respondér,

To answer.

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér respondido; *To have answered.*

Future Tense.

Havér de responder, *To be to answer.*

Gerund.

Respondiendo, *Answering.*

Participle Active.

Respondiente, or el que responde, *Answering.*

Participle Passive.

Respondido, *Answered, &c.*

All other regular Verbs of the second Conjugation in *er*, are conjugated after the same manner ; of which take the following List :

Verbs conjugated as Respondér,

Correspondér, to correspond.
Comér, to eat.
Bebér, to drink.
Reprehendér, to reprove.
Barrér, to sweep.
Vendér, to sell.
Concedér, to grant.
Acometér, to attack.
Corré, to run.

Metér, to put in.
Prometér, to promise.
Ofendér, to offend.
Escondér, to hide.
Aprendér, to learn.
Temér, to fear.
Emprendér, to undertake.
Debér, to owe.
Cometér, to commit.

Of Verbs Irregular of the second Conjugation in er, as,

Trahér, to bring.

Sabér, to know.

Tenér, to have.

Podér, to be able.

Querér, to will or love.

Ponér, to put.

Hacér, to do.

Cabér, to be contained.

Ver, to see.

Trahér, To fetch or bring.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Yo tráhigo Tu tráhes El tráhe	I fetch or bring You fetch or bring He fetches or brings
Plur.	{ Nosotros trahémos Vosotros trahéis Ellos tráhen	We fetch or bring Ye fetch or bring They fetch or bring

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Trahía Trahías Trahía	I did fetch or bring You did fetch or bring He did fetch or bring
Plur.	{ Trahíamos Trahíais Trahían	We did fetch or bring Ye did fetch or bring They did fetch or bring

First Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Tráxe, or trúxe Traxiste, or truxiste Tráxo, or trúxo	I have fetcht or brought You have fetcht or brought He hath fetcht or brought
Plur.	{ Traximos, or truximos Traxisteis, or truxisteis Traxeron, or truxeron	We have fetcht or brought Ye have fetcht or brought They have fetcht or brought

Second

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	Hé, or húve Has Ha Hémox, or havémox	Trahido,	I have fetcht or brought, &c.
Plur.	Havéis Han.		

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havia Hávias Hayfa Haviámox	Trahido,	I had fetcht or brought, &c.
Plur.	Haviadeis Havian.		

First Future.

Sing.	Traheré Traherás Traherá Traherémox		I shall or will fetch or bring, &c.
Plur.	Traheréis Traherán		

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or téngo de trahér Has de trahér Ha de trahér Hémox, or havémox de trahér		I am to or must fetch or bring, &c.
Plur.	Havéis de trahér. Han de trahér		

The third and fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing. { Tráhe tu,
Tráhiga el,Bring or fetch thou
Let him bring or fetch

Plur.

<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Trahigámos nosótrós,</td><td><i>Let us bring or fetch</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Trahed vosótrós,</td><td><i>Do ye bring or fetch</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Tráhigan éllos</td><td><i>Let them bring or fetch</i></td></tr> </table>	Trahigámos nosótrós,	<i>Let us bring or fetch</i>	Trahed vosótrós,	<i>Do ye bring or fetch</i>	Tráhigan éllos	<i>Let them bring or fetch</i>
Trahigámos nosótrós,	<i>Let us bring or fetch</i>						
Trahed vosótrós,	<i>Do ye bring or fetch</i>						
Tráhigan éllos	<i>Let them bring or fetch</i>						

Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cómo; Aunque, Oxalá.

When, God grant, would to God.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Tráhiga</td><td rowspan="2">}</td></tr> <tr> <td>Tráhigas</td></tr> </table>	Tráhiga	}	Tráhigas
Tráhiga	}			
Tráhigas				
	Tráhiga			
	Trahigámos			
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Trahigáis</td> <td rowspan="2">}</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Tráhigan</td> </tr> </table>	Trahigáis	}	Tráhigan
Trahigáis	}			
Tráhigan				
	Trahigáis			

Preterimperfect Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Truxéra, truxésse, trahería</td><td rowspan="2">}</td></tr> <tr> <td>Truxéras, truxésses, traherías</td></tr> </table>	Truxéra, truxésse, trahería	}	Truxéras, truxésses, traherías
Truxéra, truxésse, trahería	}			
Truxéras, truxésses, traherías				
	Truxéra, truxésse, trahería			
	Truxéramos, truxéssemos, traheríamos			
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Truxéradeis, truxéssedeis, traheríadeis</td> <td rowspan="2">}</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Truxéran, truxéssen, traherían</td> </tr> </table>	Truxéradeis, truxéssedeis, traheríadeis	}	Truxéran, truxéssen, traherían
Truxéradeis, truxéssedeis, traheríadeis	}			
Truxéran, truxéssen, traherían				
	Truxéradeis, truxéssedeis, traheríadeis			
	Truxéran, truxéssen, traherían			

The first and second may be conjugated by Traxéra, and Traxésse.

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Háya</td><td rowspan="2">}</td></tr> <tr> <td>Háyas</td></tr> </table>	Háya	}	Háyas
Háya	}			
Háyas				
	Háya			
	Hayámos			
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Hayáis</td> <td rowspan="2">}</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Hyan</td> </tr> </table>	Hayáis	}	Hyan
Hayáis	}			
Hyan				
	Hayáis			
	Hyan			

<i>Trahido,</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>When, or would to God I have</td><td rowspan="2">}</td></tr> <tr> <td>brought or sent, &c.</td></tr> </table>	When, or would to God I have	}	brought or sent, &c.
When, or would to God I have	}			
brought or sent, &c.				

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Huviéra, or huviésse	Trahido,	When, or would to God had brought or fetcht, &c.
	Huviéras, or huviésses		
	Huviéra, or huviésse		
Plur.	Huviéramos, or huviéssemos		
Plur.	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis		
	Huviéran, or huviéssen		

First Future.

Sing.	Traxére, or truxére	Trahido,	When, or God grant I shall fetch or bring, &c.
	Traxéres, or truxéres		
	Traxére, or truxére		
Plur.	Traxéremos, or truxéremos		
	Traxéredeis, or truxéredeis		
	Traxéren, or truxéren.		

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré	Trahido,	When, or God grant I may, or shall have brought or fetcht, c.
	Huviéres		
	Huviére		
	Huviéremos		
Plur.	Huviéredeis		
	Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood,

Present.

Trahér,

To bring, or fetch;

Preterperfect.

Havér trahido,

To have brought, or fetch'd.

Future.

Havér, or esperár de trahér *To bring, or fetch hereafter.*

Gerund.

Trahiendo,

Bringing, or fetching.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Trahido

Brought, or fetch'd, &c.

The same manner of Conjugation is to be observed in all Verbs compounded of *Trahér*, as *Retrabér*, to draw back, &c.

The Irregular Verb Sabér, To know.

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Yo sé, Tu sábes, El sabe,	I know You know He knows
Plur.	{ Sabémos, Sabéis Sáben,	We know Ye know They know

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Sabía, Sabias, Sabía,	I did know You did know He did know
Plur.	{ Sabíamos, Sabiadeis Sabían,	We did know Ye did know They did know

First

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Súpe, Supíste, Súpo, Supimos,	I knew You knew He knew We knew
Plur.	{ Supísteis Supiéron,	Ye knew They knew

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{ He, or húve sabido Has sabido, Ha sabido,	I have known You have known He has known
Plur.	{ Hémos sabido, Havéis sabido, Han sabido,	We have known Ye have known They have known

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Havía Havías Havía	Sabido,	I had known You had known He had known
	{ Havíamos Haviadeis		We had known
Plur.	Havian		Ye had known
			They had known

First Future.

Sing.	{ Sabré, Sabrés, Sabrá,	I shall, or will know You shall, or will know He shall, or will know
Plur.	{ Sabrémos, Sabréis, Sabrán,	We shall, or will know Ye shall, or will know They shall, or will know

Second Future.

Sing.	{ He, or t'no de fabér, Has de fabér, Ha de fabér,	I am to know You are to know He is to know
Plur.		

the SPANISH GRAMMAR.

129

Plur.	Hémos de fabér	We are to know
	Havéis de fabér	Ye are to know
	Han de fabér	They are to know

Third Future.

Havré de fabér	I shall be oblig'd to know
----------------	----------------------------

Fourth Future.

Havia de fabér	I was to know
----------------	---------------

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Sábe tu Sépa el	Know you Let him know
Plur.	{ Sepámos nosótrøs Sabéd vosótrøs Sépan éllos	Let us know Know ye Let them know

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Sépa Sépas Sépa	God grant that I may know.
	{ Sepámos	
	{ Sepáis	
	{ Sépan	

K

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Supiéra, supiésse, fabría Supiéras, supiésses, fabriás Supiéra, supiésse, fabría	{ When, or God grant I did know, &c.
	Supiéramos, supiéssemos, fabriamos	
Plur.	{ Supiéradeis, supiéssedeis, fabriadeis	
	Supiéran, supiéssen, fabrián	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Haya sabido Hayas sabido Haya sabido	{ When, or God grant I have known, &c.
	Hayámos sabido,	
Plur.	Hayáis sabido	
	Hayan sabido	

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviésse Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviésse	{ Sabido, { When, or would to God I had known, &c.
	Huviéramos, or huviéssemos	
Plur.	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
	Huviéran, or huviéssen	

First Future.

Sing.	{ Supiére Supiéres Supiére	{ When, or God grant I shall know, &c.
	Supiéremos	
Plur.	Supiéredeis	
	Supiéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres,	{ Sabido { When, or God grant I shall have known, &c.
	Huviére	
Plur.	Huviéremos	
	Huviéredeis	
	Huviéren	

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Sabér

To know

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér sabido

To have known

Future Tense.

Havér, or esperár de sabér

To know hereafter

Gerund.

Sabiéndo

Knowing

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que sabe

Knowing

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice,

Sabido

Known

The Irregular Verb Tenér, To have, or hold.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing. { Téngo
 { Tiénes
 { Tiéne

I have, or hold
You have, or hold
He has, or holds

<i>Plur.</i>	{ Tenémos Tenéis Tiénen	We have, or hold Ye have, or hold They have, or hold
--------------	-------------------------------	--

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Tenía Tenías Tenía Teníamos	I did have, or hold, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Teníadeis Tenían	

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Túve Tuviste Tavo Tuvimos	I had, or held You had, or held He had, or held We had, or held
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Tuvisteis Tuvieron	Ye had, or held They had, or held

Second and Third Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or húve tenido Has tenido Ha tenido	I have had You have had He has had
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hemos tenido Haveís tenido Han tenido	We have had Ye have ha They have had

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Havía Havías Havía Havíamos	I had had You had had He had had We had had
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Haviadeis Havían	

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Tendré terné, or tenré Tendrás ternás, or tenrás Tendrá terná, or tenrá	I shall, or will have You shall, or will have He shall, or will have
		Plur.

<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Tendrémos, ternémos, or tenrémos</i>	<i>We shall, or will have</i>
	<i>Tenréis ternéis, or tenréis</i>	<i>Ye shall, or will have</i>
	<i>Tendrán ternán; or tenrán</i>	<i>They shall, or will have</i>

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Hé de tener</i>	<i>I am to have, or hold</i>
	<i>Has de tener</i>	<i>You are to have, or hold</i>
	<i>Ha de tener</i>	<i>He is to have, or hold</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Hémos de tener</i>	<i>We are to have, or hold</i>
	<i>Havéis de tener</i>	<i>Ye are to have, or hold</i>
	<i>Han de tener</i>	<i>They are to have, or hold</i>

Third Future.

Havré de tener *I shall be oblig'd to have or hold*

Fourth Future.

Havía de tener *I was to have*

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Ten tu</i>	<i>Do thou have, or hold thou</i>
	<i>Ténga el</i>	<i>Let him have, or hold</i>
	<i>Tengámos nosótrós</i>	<i>Let us have, or hold</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Tenréis vosótrós</i>	<i>Do ye have, or hold, or let ye hold</i>
	<i>Téngan ellos</i>	<i>Let them have, or hold</i>

Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.

When, God grant, Though.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Ténga</i>	<i>When, or God grants I do have, or hold, &c.</i>
	<i>Téngas</i>	
	<i>Ténga</i>	
	<i>Tengámos</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Tengáis</i>	
	<i>Téngan</i>	

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Tuviéra, tuviéssé, ternía, or tendría	When, or would to God I did have or hold, &c.
	Tuviéras, tuviéssés, ternías, or tendrías	
	Tuviéra, tuviéssé, ternía, or tendría	
	Tuviéramos, tuviéssemos, ternía- mos, or tendríamos	
Plur.	Tuviéradeis, tuviéssedeis, ternía- mos, or tendríadeis	
	Tuviérán, tuviéssén, ternían, or tendrían	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	Haya tenido	When, or God grant I have had, or held, &c.
	Hayas tenido	
	Haya tenido	
	Hayámos tenido	
Plur.	Hayáis tenido	
	Hayan tenido	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	Huviéra, or huviéssé	Tenido,	When, or would to God I had had, or held &c.
	Huviéras, or huviéssés		
	Huviéra, or huviéssé		
	Huviéramos, or huviéssemos		
Plur.	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis		
	Huviérán, or huviéssén		

First Future.

Sing.	Tuviére	When, or God grant I shall have or hold, &c.
	Tuviéres	
	Tuviére	
	Tuviéremos	
Plur.	Tuviéredeis	
	Tuviéren	

Second

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré Huviéres	Tenido,	When, or God grant <i>I shall have had</i> or held, &c.
	Huviére		
Plur.	Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Tenér

To have or to hold.

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér tenido

To have had, held

Future Tense.

Havér de tenér

To be to have or hold

Gerund.

Teniendo

Holding

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que tiene

Holding

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Tenido

Held

Like this Verb simple are its Compounds in all points declined, thro' all Moods and Tenses, as

Mantenér, *to maintain*; Yo manténgo, *I maintain*, mantuve, *I maintained*.

Detenér, *to detain or stay*; Detengo, *I detain*; detuve, *I detained*.

Retenér, to retain or withhold; Reténgo, I retain; retéve, I retained
 Sostenér, to sustain or upbold; Sosténgo, I sustain; sostúve, I sustained

The Irregular Verb Podér, To be able,

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

	Puédo	I can, or am able
Sing.	{ Puédes	You can, or are able
	{ Puede	He can, or is able
	{ Podemos	We can, or are able
Plur.	{ Podéis	Ye can, or are able
	{ Puéden	They can, or are able

Preterimperfect.

	Podía	I could, or was able
Sing.	{ Podías	You could, or was able
	{ Podía	He could, or was able
	{ Podíamos	We could, or were able
Plur.	{ Podíadeis	Ye could, or were able
	{ Podian	They could, or were able

First Preterperfect.

	Púde	{ I could, or have been able, &c.
Sing.	{ Pudíste	
	{ Púdo	
	{ Pudímós	
Plur.	{ Pudísteis	
	{ Pudiéron	

Second

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	Hé, or húve Has Ha	Hémos, or havémos	Podido,	I could, or have been able You could, or have been able He could, or has been able We could, or have been able
Plur.	Havéis Han			Ye could, or have been able They could, or have been able

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havia Havías Havia Havíamos	Havíadeis Havían	Podido,	I had been able, &c.
Plur.	Havíadeis Havían			

First Future.

Sing.	Podré Podrás Podrá Podrémos	Podréis Podrán		I shall, or will be able, &c.
Plur.	Podréis Podrán			

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or téngo de podér Has de podér Ha de podér	Hémos, or havémos de podér Havéis de podér Han de podér		I must, or will be able, &c.
Plur.				

Third Future.

Havré de podér I shall be obliged to be able

Fourth Future.

Havía de podér I was to be able
Though

Though it seems improper for this Word to have a second, third, and fourth Future, of the Indicative Mood, or any Imperative Mood, and most Grammarians will allow it neither, yet they are frequently and properly used. As to the second Future, it is very usual, and when one says, he cannot do such a thing, to answer, *Has de poder*, You shall be able; by way of compelling slothful persons, or such as may improve by often trying to do that which they cannot do at present. The same is to be said of the Imperative, which is in the nature of the second future, being compulsive; as, if one say, *No podémos hacér ésto*, We cannot do this; and another answers, *Prés podámos*, Then let us be able; that is, let us use our Endeavours, that we may perform that which we think we cannot do. Therefore we will proceed to the

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Puéde tu Puéda él	<i>Do you be able Let him be able</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Podámos nosotros Podéd vosotros Puédan ellos	<i>Let us be able Do ye be able Let them be able</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood, with the Signs,

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Puéda Puédas Puéda Podámos	{ When, or God grant I can, or be able, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	Podáis. Puédan	

Preter-

Preterimperfect Tense.

Sing.	{ Pudiéra, pudiéssle, podría Pudiéras, pudiéssles, podrías Pudiéra, pudiéssle, podría	When, or would to God I could or might be able, &c.
	Pudiéramos, pudiésslemos, podríamos	
Plur.	{ Pudiéradeis, pudiéssledes, podríadeis	
	Pudiéran, pudiésslen, podrían	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Háya Háyas Háya Hayámos	Podido, { When, or would to God, &c. I have been able, &c.
	Haya	
Plur.	{ Hayáis	
	Hayan	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviéssle Huviéras, or huviéssles Huviéra, or huviéssle	Podido, { When, or would to God I had been able, &c.
	Huviéramos, or huviésslemos	
Plur.	{ Huviéradeis, or huviéssledes	
	Huviéran, or huviésslen	

First Future.

Sing.	{ Pudiére Pudiéres Pudiére	When, or God grant I shall, or may be able, &c.
	Pudiéremos	
Plur.	{ Pudiéredeis	
	Pudiéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviéfe, or havré Huviéres	Podido, { When, or God grant I may, or shall have been able, &c.
	Huviére	
Plur.	{ Huviéremos	
	Huviéredeis	
	Huviéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Podér

To be able

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér podido

To have been able

Gerund.

Pudiéndo,

Being able, &c.

The Irregular Verb Querér, To will, or love.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo quíero	I will, or love
	Tu quierés	You will, or love
	El quiere	He wills, or loves
Plur.	Nosotros querémos	We will, or love
	Vosotros queréis	Ye will, or love
	Ellos quiéren	They will, or love

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Quería,	I did will, or love
	Querías	You did will, or love
	Quería	He did will, or love
	Queríamos	We did will, or love
Plur.	Queríadeis	Ye did will, or love
	Querían	They did will, or love

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Quise Quisiste Quisó Quisimos Quisísteis Quisieron	I willed, or loved You willed, or loved He willed, or loved We willed, or loved Ye willed, or loved They willed, or loved
Plur.		

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ He, or húve Has Ha	{ Querido,	{ I have willed, or loved, &c.
	Hémos, or havémos		
Plur.	Havéis		
	Han		

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Havia Havías Havía Haviámos	{ Querido,	{ I had willed, or loved, &c.
	Haviadeis		
Plur.	Havian		

First Future.

Sing.	{ Querré Querrás Querrá Quertémos	{ I will, or shall will, or love, &c.
	Querréis	
Plur.	Querrán	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ He, or téngo de querér Has de querér	{ I am to, or must will, or love, &c.
	Ha de querér	
Plur.	Hémos, or havémos de querér	
	Havéis de querér	
	Han de querér	

Third

Third Future.

Havré de querér

I shall be obliged to love

Pourtth Future.

Havia de querér

I had, or I was to have

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Quiére tu Quiera el	<i>Do you will, or love</i> <i>Let him will, or love</i>
Plur.	{ Querámos nosotros Queréd vosotros Quieran ellos	<i>Let us will, or love</i> <i>Do you will, or love</i> <i>Let them will, or love</i>

Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,
When, Though, would to God,

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Quiéra Quiéras Quiéra Querámos	<i>When, or God grant I will or love, &c.</i>
Plur.	{ Queráis Quiéran	

Three Preterimperfect Tenses.

Sing.	{ Quisiéra, quisiese, querría Quisiéras, quisießes, querriás	<i>When, or God grant I would or did love, &c.</i>
	Quisiéra, quisiese, querría	
	Quisiéramos, quisiéßemos, querriámos	
Plur.	{ Quisiéramos, quisiéßemos, querriámos Quisiéradeis, quisiéßedeis, querriadeis Quisiéran, quisiéßen, querriáan	

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{ Háya Háyas Háya Hayámos	{ Querido,	{ When, or God grant I have will'd, or lov'd, &c.
Plur.	{ Hayáis Háyan		

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviéssse Huviéras, or huviéssses	{ Querido,	{ When, or would to God
	{ Huviéra, or huviéssse		I had
Plur.	{ Huviéramos, or huviésssemos		will'd, or
	{ Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis		lov'd, &c.
	{ Huviérán, or huviéssen		

First Future.

Sing.	{ Quisiére Quisiéres	{ Querido,	{ When, or God grant I shall will,
	{ Quisiére		or love, &c.
Plur.	{ Quisiéremos		
	{ Quisiéredeis		
	{ Quisiéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or havré Huviéres	{ Querido,	{ When, or God grant I shall
	{ Huviéra		be willing, or love, &c.
Plur.	{ Huviéremos		
	{ Huviéredeis		
	{ Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Querér

To wil', or love

Preter-

Preterperfect.

Havér querido

To have will'd, or lov'd

Gerund.

Queriéndo

Loving

Participle.

Querido

Will'd, or lov'd, &c.

This Verb may be declined through all Moods and Tenses with the word *mas* added to it, which with it sometimes signifies *rather*, and sometimes *more*, as *Mas quíero callár que l'ablar enc*, I had rather be silent than speak ill, or *Mas quíero a Pédro que a Juán*, I love Peter more, or better than John.

The Irregular Verb Ponér, To put, or place.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Yo pongo Tu pones El pónε
Plur.	{ Ponémos Ponéis Pónen

} I put, or place, &c.

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Ponía Ponías Ponía
-------	----------------------------

I did put
You did put
He did put

Plur.

Poníamos	We did put
Ponia'eis	Ye did put
Ponian	They did put

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Puse Pusiste Puso	} I have put, &c.
Plur.	Pusimos Pusisteis Pusieron	

Second Preterperfect.

Sing. He, or háv. Puésto, I have put, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

Sing. Havía Puésto, I had put, &c.

First Future.

Sing. Pondré, or porné I shall, or will put, &c.

Second Future.

Sing. He, or Téngo de poner I am to, or must put, &c.

Third Future.

Havré de poner I shall be oblig'd to put
Havía de poner I had, or I was to put

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	Pon tu Pónga el	Do you put, or put thou Let him put
	Pongámos nosótrios	Let us put
Plur.	Poned vosotros	Do ye put, or let ye put
	Póngan éllos	Let them put

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ Cómo, Aunque, Oxálá,
 { When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Póngá Póngas Póngá Pongámos	When, or God grant I do put, &c.
Plur.	{ Pongáis Póngan	

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Pusiéra, pusiéssé, or pornía, pondría Pusiéras, pusiésses, or pornías, pondrías Pusiéra, pusiéssé, or pornía, pondría	When, or would to God I did put, &c.
Plur.	{ Pusiéraramos, pusiésselmos, or porníamos, pondríamos Pusiéradeis, pusiéssedeis, or porníadeis Pusiéraran, pusiéßen, or pornían, pondrian	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Haya Háyas Haya Hayámos	When, or God grant I have &c.
Plur.	{ Hayáis Hiayan	

First

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviéssé Huviéras, gr huviésses Huviéra, or huviéssé	Puésto,	{ When, or would to God I bad put, &c.
	{ Huviéramos, or huviéssemos Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis		
Plur.	{ Huviéran, or huviéssen		

First Future.

Sing.	{ Pusiére Pusiéres Pusiére	When, or God grant I shall put, &c.
	{ Pusieremos Pusieredeis	
Plur.	{ Pusiereron	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére	Puésto,	{ When, or God grant I shall have put, &c.
	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis		
Plur.	{ Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Ponéa,

To put

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér puésto;

To have put

Gerund.

Poniéndo,

Putting

Participle Passive.

Puesto

Put, &c.

After this manner are declined in all respects, *Componér*, to compose, *yo compóngo*, I compose; *compúse*, I have composed; *Disponér*, to dispose, *dispóngo*, I dispose, *dispúse*, I have disposed; *Anteponér*, to set before, *antepóngo*, I set before, *antepúse*, I have set before; *Propóner*, to propose, *propóngo*, I propose, *propúse*, I proposed; and, if there be any other Verbs derived by Composition from *Ponér*.

The Irregular Verb Hacer, To do, or make.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Yo hago Tu haces El hace	{ I do or make You do or make He does or makes
Plur.	{ Hacemos Hacéis Hacén	{ We do or make Ye do or make They do or make

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Hacía Hacias Hacia	{ I did or made, &c.
Plur.	{ Hacíamos Haciédeis, or hacíais Hacían	

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Hice Hiciste Hizo	{ I have made, &c.
Plur.		

<i>Plur.</i>	Hicimos Hicísteis Hicieron	<i>We have made, &c.</i>

Second Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	He, or húve Has Ha	<i>Hécho,</i>	<i>I have done, or made, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Hémox, or havémox Havéis Han		

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Havía Havías Havía Havíamos Havíadeis Havían	<i>Hécho,</i>	<i>I had done or made, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>			

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	Haré Harás Hará Harémos	<i>I shall, or will do, or make, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Haréis Harán	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	He, o tengo de hacér Has de hacér Ha de hacér Hémox de hacér	<i>I am to, or must do, or make, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Havéys de hacer Han de hacer	

Third Future.

Havré de hacér,

I shall be oblig'd to do

Fourth Future.

Havía de hacér

I had, or I was to do

Imperative Mood.

Sing. { Ház, or hágé tu

Do or make thou, or do thou

Hágá el

Let him do or make

Plur. { Hagámos nosótrós

Let us do or make

Hacéd vosótrós

Do ye or make ye, let ye do

Hágán éllos

Let them do or make

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Como, Aunque, Oxalá.

When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing. { Hágá

*When, or God grant I
do or make, &c.*

Hágás

Hágá

Hagámos

Plur. { Hegáis

Hágán

Preterimperfect.

Sing. { Hiciéra, hiciésse, haria

When, or would to God

Hiciéras, hiciésses, harías

Hiciéra, hiciésse, haría

I did do or make, &c.

Plur. { Hiciéramos, hiciéssemos, haríamos

Hiciéradeis, hiciéssedeis, haríadeis

Hiciéran, hiciéssen, harían

Préter-

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Háya hécho Háyas hécho Háya hécho Hayámos hecho	When, or God grant I have made, or done, &c.
	Hayás hécho	
	Hayá hécho	
	Hayámos hecho	
Plur.	{ Hayáis hécho Hayas hécho	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviéssé Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviéssé	When, or would to God I had done or made, &c.
	Huviéramos, or huviéssenos	
Plur.	{ Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
	Huviéran, or huviéssen	
	Hécho,	

First Future.

Sing.	{ Hiciére Hiciéres Hiciére	When, or God grant I shall or will do or make, &c.
	Hiciéremos	
Plur.	{ Hiciéredeis	
	Hiciéren	
	Hécho,	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére	When, or God grant I shall have done or made, &c.
	Huviéremos	
Plur.	{ Huviéredeis	
	Huviéren	
	Hécho,	

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Hacér,

To do or make.

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér hécho

To have done or made

Future Tense.

Havér, or esperár de hacér

To make or do hereafter

Gerund.

Haciéndo

Doing or making

Participle Active of the Preter Tense.

Hécho

Made or done, &c.

In the same manner are declined all the Verbs proceeding by composition from *Hacér*, as *Deshacér*, to undo, *Rehacér*, to make again, *Contrahacér*, to counterfeit,

The Irregular Verb, Cabér, To be contained.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo quépo
	Tu cábes
	El cábe
	Cabémos
Plur.	Cabéis
	Cáben

I am contained
You are contained
He is contained
We are contained
Ye are contained
They are contained

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Cabía Cabías Cábia Cabíamos Cabíadeis Cabían	I was contained You was contained He was contained We were contained Ye were contained They were contained
Plur.		

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Cúpe Cupíste Cúpo Cupímos	I have been contained You have been contained He has been contained We have been contained
Plur.	{ Cupísteis Cupiéron	Ye have been contained They have been contained

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{ He, or húve cabido Has cabido Ha cabido	I have been contained You have been contained He has been contained
Plur.	{ Hémos cabido Havéis cabido	We have been contained Ye have been contained
	{ Han cabido	They have been contained

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Havía Havías Havia Havíamos	Cabido,	{ I had been contained You had been contained He had been contained We had been contained Ye had been contained They had been contained
Plur.	{ Havíades Havían		

First Future.

Plur.	{ Cabré Cabrás Cabrá Cabrémox	I shall or will be contained You shall or will be contained He shall or will be contained We shall or will be contained Ye shall or will be contained They shall or will be contained
Sing.	{ Cabréis Cabràn	Second

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or tengo de cabér Has de cabér Ha de cabér Hemos de cabér	} I am to, or must be contained, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Havéis de cabér Han de cabér	

• The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

• Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Cábē tu Quépa el	Be you contained
	{ Quépámos nosotros	Let him be contained
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Cabé vosotros	Let us be contained
	{ Quépan ellos	Be yo contained Let them be contained

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{	Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.
	When, God grant, Though.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Quépa Quépas Quépa Quépamos	} When or God grant I am contained, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Quepáis Quépan	

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Cupiéra, cupiésse, cabría Cupiéras, cupiésses, cabrías Cupiéra, cupiésse, cabría	When, or would to God I was contained, &c.
	Cupiéramos, cupiéssemos, cabriamos	
Plur.	{ Cupiéreis, cupiéssedeis, cabriadeis	
	Cupíeran, cupiéssen, cabrían	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Háya cabido Háyas cabido Háya cabido	When, or God grant I have been contained, &c.
	Háyamos cabido	
Plur.	{ Háyais cabido	
	Háyan cabido	

First and Second Preterplúperfects.

Sing.	{ Huivéra, or huivésse Huivéras, or huivésses Huivéra, or huivésse	Cabido, { When, or would to God I had been con- tained, &c.
	Huivéramos, or huivéssemos	
Plur.	{ Huivéredeis, or huivéssedeis	
	Huivéran, or huivéssen	

First Future.

Sing.	{ Cupiére Cupiéres Cupiére	When, or God grant I shall, or will be contained, &c.
	Cupiéremos	
Plur.	{ Cupiéredeis Cupiéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or hâvré Huviéres, Huviére	Cabido { When, or God grant I may or shall be contained here- after, &c.
	Huviéremos	
Plur.	{ Huviéredeis Huviéren	

156 *The RUDIMENT'S* of
Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Cabér

To be contained.

Preterperfect.

Havér cabido

To have been contained.

Gerund.

Cabiéndo

Being contained.

Participle.

Cabido

Contained.

The Irregular Verb, Vér, To see.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing. { Yo véo
Tu ves
El ve
Vémos
Plur. { Véis
Ven

I see
You see
He see
We see
Ye see
They see

Sing. { Vía, or veía
Vías
Vía
Viamos
Plur. { Viadeis
Vian

I did see
You did set
He did see
We did see
Ye did see
They did see

First

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Ví, or vide	I saw
	Viste	You saw
	Vío	He saw
	Vimos	We saw
Plur.	Vistéis	Ye saw
	Viéron	They saw

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	He, or húve visto	I have seen
	Has visto	You have seen
	Ha visto	He has seen
	Hemos visto	We have seen
Plur.	Havéis visto	Ye have seen
	Han visto	They have seen

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havía	Visto,	I had seen
	Havías		You had seen
	Havía		He had seen
	Havíamos		We had seen
Plur.	Havíadeis		Ye had seen
	Havían		They had seen

First Future.

Sing.	Veré	I shall or will see
	Verás	You shall or will see
	Verá	He shall or will see
	Verémos	We shall or will see
Plur.	Veréis	Ye shall or will see
	Verán	They shall or will see

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or téngo de vér	I am to or must see
	Has de vér	You are to or must see
	Ha de vér	He is to or must see
	Hemos de vér	We are to or must see
Plur.	Havéis de vér	Ye are to or must see
	Han de vér	They are to or must see

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Vée, or vé tu Véa el	Do thou see, or see thou Let him see
Plur.	{ Veámos nosótrós Ved vosótrós Véan éllos	Let us see Do ye see, or let ye see Let them see

The Subjunctive, the Optative, and the Infinitive Moods, altogether as in the other Verbs before, as the Present Tense of the two first Moods *Véa*, the Preterimperfect, *Viéra, vería, viéssse*; the Pteeterperfect, *Haya visto*, the Preterpluperfect, *Huviera, or huviéssse visto*; the Future, *Viére*. The Infinitive, *Vér*, Participle, *Visto*.

The Irregular Verb Caér, To fall.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Cáigo Cáes Cáe	I fall Thou fallest He falls
Plur.	{ Caémos Caéis Cáen	We fall Ye fall They fall

Preterimperfect.

Caía, caías, &c.

First Preterperfect.

Caí, caiste, &c.

Second

Second Preterperfect.

He caído. Has caído, &c.

And so of the other Tenses, like the regular Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Cáe Cáiga Caigámos	Do you fall, or fall thou Let him fall Let us fall
Plur.	{ Caéd Cáigan	Do ye fall, or let ye fall Let them fall

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Caér To fall

Gerund.

Cayéndo Falling

The Verb *Entendér*, to understand, in the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood makes *Entiéndo*; Preterperfect, *Entendí*.

Of the Verbs in *Cér*.

TH E following Verbs ending in *cer*, are generally spelt without an *s*, though it were more proper to write them with it before the *c*, which would render them all regular, and more answerable to the *Latin*, from which many of them are derived; but since we generally find them otherwise, it is proper to note them down here.

Infinitive.

Infinitive.

Adolecér, to grow sick
 Agradecér, to thank
 Amortecér, to dye away
 Desfallecér, to faint
 Apetecér, to desire
 Crecér, to grow
 Encallecér, to wax hard as a Corn
 Encarecér, to magnify
 Establecér, to establish
 Fenecér, to finish
 Pacé, to feed
 Perecér, to perish
 Compadecér, to have Compassion
 nocér, to know
 Padecér, to suffer
 Ofrecér, to offer
 Guarneçér, to garnish
 Parecér, to appear
 Nacér, to be born
 Enflaqueçér, to grow lean
 Enriqueçér, to enrich
 Empobrecér, to grow poor
 Endurecér, to grow hard
 Fallecér, to fail or dye
 Engrandecér, to magnify
 Entristecér, to grow melancholy
 Ennoblecér, to ennable
 Florecér, to flourish
 Fortalecér, to strengthen
 Favorecér, to favour
 Obedecér, to obey
 Desyanecér, to make vain
 Ensoberbecér, to grow proud
 Emmudecér, to grow dumb
 Establecér, to establish
 Merecér, to merit.

*Indicative.**Present Tense. Preterperfect.*

Ajoléscō	Adolecí
Agradéscō	Agradeci
Amortéscō	Amorteci
Desfalléscō	Desfalleci
Apetéscō	Apeteci
Créscō	Crecí
Encalléscō	Encalleci
Encaréscō	Encareci
Establecéscō	Estableci
Fenéscō	Feneci
Pásco	Paci
Peréscō	Pereci
Compadéscō	Compadeci
Conóscō	Conoci
Padéscō	Padeci
Ofréscō	Ofreci
Guarnéscō	Guarneci
Paréscō	Pareci
Násco	Naci
Enflaqueçō	Enflaqueci
Enriqueçō	Enriqueci
Empobréscō	Empobreci
Enduréscō	Endureci
Falléscō	Falleci
Engrandéscō	Engrandeci
Entristéscō	Entristeci
Ennobléscō	Ennobleci
Floréscō	Floreci
Fortaléscō	Fortaleci
Favoréscō	Favoreci
Obedéscō	Obedeci
Desyanéscō	Desyaneci
Ensoberbésco	Ensoberbeci
Emmudéscō	Emmudeci
Establecéscō	Estableci
Merecéscō	Mereci

Except from this general Rule, *Vencér*, to overcome, *Vénzo*, *Vencí*; which shows what was said above, that they might more properly all be written with an *s* in the infinitive Mood, and present Tense of the indicative Mood, as *Pascér*, from the Latin *Pascere*; *conoscér*, from the Latin *cognoscere*, and

and so of others; but custom has prevailed to write them as above, and there is no contending against it; but *Vencér*, cannot admit of the *s*, being derived from the *Latin* *-incere*, and therefore keeps on without an *s*. in all Moods and Tenses;

Of the Verbs in gér.

THE following Verbs which have their Infinitive in *gér*, make the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, by changing *g* into *j*; the same in the third Singular, and the first and third Plur. of the Imperative Mood, and through all persons, and both numbers of the Present Tense of the Optative, and the Subjunctive Moods: That is when in the *ultima*, or last syllable there is an *a* or *o*.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Indicative.</i>	<i>Present Tense. Preterperfect.</i>
<i>Encogér</i> , to shrink,	<i>Encój</i> ,	<i>Encogi</i> .
<i>Recogér</i> , to gather,	<i>Recojo</i> ,	<i>Recogi</i> .
<i>Acogér</i> , to entertain,	<i>Acojo</i> ,	<i>Acogi</i> .
<i>Escogér</i> , to choose,	<i>Escójo</i> ,	<i>Escogi</i> .
<i>Coger</i> , to catch,	<i>Cójo</i> ,	<i>Cogi</i> .

In other Moods and Tenses, like the Regulars, except the Tenses before mentioned.

Of the Verbs in ér.

THE following Verbs in *ér* make the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood by adding *i* in the last syllable but one of the Infinitive, and

M

the

the same in the second and third Persons Singular, and the third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and the Subjunctive Moods.

Infinitive.

Defendér, *to defend,*
Hendér, *to cleave asunder,*
Cernér, *to sift,*
Entendér, *to understand,*
Héler, *to flink,*

*Indicative,
Present Tense. Preterperfect.*

Defiéndo, *I defend.*
Hiéndo, *I cleave asunder.*
Ciérno, *I sift.*
Entiendo, *I understand.*
Hiédo, *I flink.*

The next underneath form the Present Tense of the Indicative, by turning *o* in the last Syllable but one of the Infinitive into *ue*; and the same in the second and third Person Singular, and the third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive.

Infinitive,

Volvér, *to turn,*
Solér, *to be wont,*
Cozér, *to boil,*
Dolér, *to grieve,*
Olér, *to smell,*

*Indicative,
Present. Preterperfect.*

Vuélvo, *I turn.*
Suélo, *I am wont.*
Cuézo, *I boil.*
Duélo, *I grieve.*
Huélo, *I smell.*

The same in all Verbs deriv'd from any of them; as *Revolvér*, *to stir about;* *Condolér*, *to suffer with,* &c.

The next are vary'd as follows.

Infinitive.

Caér, *to fall.*
Roér, *to gnaw,*
Valér, *to be worth,*

*Indicative.
Present Tense. Preterperfect.*

Cáigo, *I fall.*
Roigo, *I gnaw.*
Válgo, *I am worth.*

Of

Of Verbs Passive of the Second Conjugation.

THEY are formed and conjugated in the same manner as those of the first Conjugation; as *ver*, to see is made passive, thus:

Present. Indicative. Imperfect. Perfect.

Sing.	{ Sói visto éres visto es visto	{ I am seen, &c.	{ éra visto éras visto éra visto	{ Fui, or he sido visto, &c.
Plur.	{ Somos vistos Sóis vistos Son vistos		{ éramos vistos éradeis vistos éran vistos	{ And so the rest of the Tenses <i>I have been seen</i>

Of Verbs Reciprocal.

These Verbs, and all terminated in *-erse*, are likewise conjugated as those of the first Conjugation; as

Perderse,

To lose one's self, to be lost.

Indicative.

Present.

Imperfect.

Perfect.

Sing.	{ Me pierdo Te pierdes Se pierde	{ I lose myself, &c.	{ Me perdía Te perdías Se perdía	{ Me perdí Te perdiste Se perdió
Pl.	{ Nos perdemos Os perdéis Se pierden		{ Nos perdíamos Os perdiadeis Se perdían	{ Nos perdimos Os perdisteis Se perdiéron

and so of the other Tenses.

The Imperative thus:

Sing.	{ Pierdete Pierdes Perdámosnos		
Plur.	{ Perded os Pierdanse		

Leave yourself.

Note, That the Persons are often doubled in the Conjugation of those Verbs; as, *No me pierdo, tu te pierdes, el se pierde, &c.* or thus, *Pierdome, Pierdeste, Perdiéste, &c.* by putting the Pronoun after the Verb.

Of Verbs Impersonals.

The Impersonals of this Conjugation are,

Haver,

To be, as in what concerns a Place, &c.

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Háí, or no hay

There is, or there is not.

Imperfect.

Havia,

There was.

First Preterperfect.

Hubo,

There was, or there has been.

Second Perfect.

Ha havido,

There has been.

Plusperfect.

Havia havido.

There had been.

Future.

Havrá;

There will, or shall be.

Second Future.

Há de havér, There must be.

and so of the other Futures.

Imperative.

Háya, Let there be.

Optative. Present.

Oxalá que háya, God grant that there be.

Imperfect.

Que huviéra, &c. That there might be.

Perfect.

Que háya havido, That there hath been.

Plusperfect.

Que huviéra havido, That there had been.

Future.

Que huviére, That there shall be, &c.

The Spanish is perfect Latin in the Expressions of the impersonal Verbs, which manner cannot be found in the English, French, and other Languages; the English being obliged to add *there*, or *it*, and the French *il*, &c. and this in all the Impersonals throughout all the Conjugations.

Examples.

Hai un hombre que me espéra abáxo para ir à la Comédia, *There is a Man that stays for me below to go to the Play-house.*

Havia diez soldados en la Emboscada, *There were one hundred
Soldiers in the Ambush.*

No havia mas que treinta y dos, *There were no more than thirty-two.
Que haya o no haya poco importa, what there be, or not, is but
of little Importance, &c.*

Ser, To be, as in what concerns be Essence, or Qualities of a Thing, &c.

Indicative.

Pres. Es, no es

It is, it is not.

Imper. era,

It was.

Pt. Fui,

It hath been.

and so in the other Tenses.

Examples.

Es noche, or es de noche,

It is Night.

Es verdad,

It is true.

Era así,

It was so.

Que sea o no sea, que se me da, *That it be, or not be, what is
it to me.*

In the same manner is conjugated the Verb *Ser*.
Meneſter, to be necessary, or requisite, as

Es Meneſter, que yo váya à vér la Ciudad the Londres, pues
es un Mundo pequeño, en que florécen tódas las Artes y Ciéncias
que están divididas por las quátro partes de el Mundo, *It is ne-
cessary that I go to see the City of London, because it is a little
World, in which all the Arts and Sciences that are divided in the
four Parts of the World do flourish.*

Será Meneſter, que Pedro y Juán se avéngan, *It will be ne-
cessary or requisite, that Peter and John agree together.*

Si fuéra Meneſter, yo viniéra, *I would come if it should be re-
quisite or necessary, &c.*

The Verb Impersonal Placér, To please.

Indicative Mood.

Pref. Pláce;

It pleases.

Imperf. Placiá,

It did please.

First Perf. Plagó,

It pleased.

Second Perf. Ha Placídos;

It has pleased.

and so in the other Tenses.

Imperative.

Pléga,

*Let it please, &c.**Llovér, To Rain.*

Lluéve,

It rains.

Llovía,

*It did rain, &c.**Hedér, To Stink.*

Hiéde,

It stinks.

Hedia,

*It did stink, &c.**Olér, To smell.*

This Verbs changes *o* into *ue* in the Present Tenses, as

Huéle,

It smells.

Huéla,

Let it smell.

Que huéla,

*That it may smell, &c.**Acontecer, acaecer, To happen.*

Acontece,

*It happens, &c.**Pertenecer, To belong.*

Pertenéce,

It belongs, &c.

Enough

Enough of the Impersonal Actives, let us now put an Example of the Impersonal Passive.

Leérse, To be read.

Se Lee,
Se Leía,
Se Leyó,

*It is reading.
It was reading.
It has been read, &c.*

And so are conjugated *establecerse*, to be established or ordered by Parliament, &c.

Se establece,	<i>It is established.</i>
Se estableció,	<i>It was establishing.</i>
Se establecido;	<i>It has been established, &c.</i>
<i>Imperative, Establecése,</i>	<i>Let it be established, &c.</i>

Saberse, To be known.

Se sabe, or sabese,	<i>It is known.</i>
Se sabía, or sabíase,	<i>It was known.</i>
Se supo, or supose,	<i>It has been known, &c.</i>
<i>Imperative, Sépase,</i>	<i>Let it be known, &c.</i>

N. B. That all the Verbs regular or irregular of the Second Conjugation, may be conjugated in the same manner as those of the first Conjugation by the auxiliar Verb *estár*, and the Gerund of the Verb; as,

Present Tense. Indicative.

Sing.	<i>Léo, or estoi Leyéndo</i>	<i>I read, or I am reading, &c.</i>
	<i>Lees, or estás Leyéndo</i>	
	<i>Lee, or está Leyéndo</i>	
	<i>Leémos, or estámós Leyéndo</i>	
Plur.	<i>Leéis, or estáis Leyéndo</i>	
	<i>Léen, or estan Leyéndo</i>	

and so in the rest of the Moods and Tenses.

Of Verbs Regular of the third Conjugation
in ir, as

Subir, To go up or ascend.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Súbo Súbes Súbe Subímos	} I go up or ascend, &c.
	Subímos	
Plur.	Subis	
	Suben	

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Subía Subías Subía Subíamos	} I was going up, &c.
	Subíamos	
Plur.	Subíadeis, or subíais	
	Subían	

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Subí Subíste Subió Subímos	} I went up or ascended, &c.
	Subímos	
Plur.	Subísteis	
	Subieron	

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{ He, or húve Has Ha Hémos	} Subido,	} I have gone up or ascended, &c.
	Has		
	Ha		
	Hémos		
Plur.	Havéis		
	Han		

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havía Havías Havia Havíamos Haviadeis Havian.	{	Subido,	{	<i>I had gone up or ascend- ed, &c.</i>
Plur.					

First Future.

Sing.	Subiré Subirás Subirá Subirémos	{	}	<i>I shall or will go up or af- cend, &c.</i>
Plur.	Subiréis Subirán			

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or tengo de subir Has de subir Ha de subir	{	}	<i>I am to or must go up or af- cend, &c.</i>
Plur.	Hémos de subir Havéis de subir Han de subir			

The Third and Fourth Future as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	Súbe tu Súba el	Go you up or ascend
	Subámos nosotros	Let him go up or ascend
Plur.	Subíd vosotros	Let us go up or ascend
	Súban ellos	Do ye go up or ascend Let them ga up or ascend

Subjunctive

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*
 { *When, God grant, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Súba Súbas Súba Subámos	{ When or God grant I do go up or ascend, &c.
Plur.	{ Subáis Súban	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{ Subiéra, subiésse, or subiría Subíeras, subiésses, or subirías Subiéra, subiésse, or subiría	{ When, or would to God I did go up or ascend, &c.
Plur.	{ Subiéramos, subiéssemos, or subiríamos Subíradeis, subiéssedeis, or subiríadeis Subíran, subiéssen, or subírian	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Haya Hayas Haya Hayámos	{ Subido, { When, or God grant I have gone up or ascended, &c.
Plur.	{ Hayáis Háyan	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviésse Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviésse	{ Subido, { When, or would to God I had gone up or ascended, &c.
Plur.	{ Huviéramos, or huviéssemos Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis Huviéran, or huviéssen	

First

First Future.

Sing.	iére Subiere Subieremos Subiéredeis Subiéren	When, or God grant I shall or will go up or ascend, &c.
Plur.		

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren	Subido,	When, or God grant I shall have gone up or ascended, &c.
Plur.			

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Subir,
To go up or ascend.

Preterperfect.

Havér subido,
To have gone up or ascended.

Future Tense.

Havér o esperár de subir,
To be to go up or ascend hereafter.

Gerund.

Subiendo,
Going up or ascending.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que sube,
Going up or ascending.

Participle Passive.

Subido,
Gone up or ascended.

In

In the same manner all other Regular Verbs of the third Conjugation in *ir*, are conjugated; as *Sufrir*, to suffer, *Hincbir*, or *Hencbir*, to fill, &c.

These four Verbs, *Abrir*, to open, *uir*, to cover, *Descubrir*, to uncover, and *Encubrir*, to conceal, are Regular, except only in the second Preterperfect Tense; which, instead of *Abrido*, as other Verbs of this Sort, is *Abierto*, *Cubierto*, *Des cubierto*, and *Encubierto*. Next follow

*The Irregular Verbs of the third Conjugation,
in ir, as*

Venir, To come.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Véngo Viénes Viéne	I come You come He comes
Plur.	{ Venímos Venis Viénen	We come Ye come They come

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Venía Venias Venía	} I did come, &c.
	{ Veníamos	
Plur.	{ Veníadeis, or veníais	
	{ Venían	

First

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Vine Veníste Víno Venímos	I came You came He came We came
Plur.	Venísteis Veníeron	Ye came They came

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	He, or húve Has Ha	Venido,	I have come, &c.
Plur.	Hémos Havéis Han		

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havía Havías Havía Havíamos	Venido,	I had come, &c.
Plur.	Havíadeis Havían		

First Future.

Sing.	Vendré, or verné Vendrás, or vernás Vendrá, or verná	I shall, or will come, &c.
Plur.	Vendrémos, or vernémos	
	Vendréis, or verneis Vendrán, or vernán	

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or téngo de venir Has de venir Ha de venir	I am to, or must come, &c.
Plur.	Hémos de venir Havéis de venir Han de venir	

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	Ven tu	<i>Do you come, or come I</i>
	Vénga el	<i>Let him come</i>
	Vengámos nosotros	<i>Let us come</i>
Plur.	Venid vosotros	<i>Do ye come, or let ye come</i>
	Véngan ellos	<i>Let them come</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.
 { When, God grant, Though.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Vénga	{	<i>When, or God grant I do come, &c.</i>
	Véngas		
	Vénga		
	Véngamos		
Plur.	Vengáis		
	Véngan		

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	Viniéra, viniéssie, vernía, or vendría	{	<i>When, or would to God I did come, &c.</i>
	Viniéras, viniéssies, vernías, or vendrías		
	Viniéra, viniéssie, vernía, or vendría		
	Viniéramos, viniéssimos, verníamos, or vendríamos		
Plur.	Viniéradeis, viniéssedeis, verníadeis, or vendriádeis		
	Viniérán, viniéssien, vernían, or vendrián		

Preter-

Preterperfect.

Sing.	Háya Haya Hayamos Hayáis Háyan	Venido,	When, or God grant I have come, &c.
-------	--	---------	--

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	Huviéra, or huviéssé Huviéras, or huviéssés Huviéra, or huviéssé Huviéramos, or huviéssémos Huviéradeis, or huviéssédeis Huviérán, or huviéssén	Venido,	When, or would to God I had come, &c.
-------	--	---------	--

First Future.

Sing.	Viniére Viniéres Viniére Viniéremos	Venido,	When, or God grant I shall, or will come, &c.
Plur.	Viniéredeis Viniéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré Huviéres, Huviére Huviéremos	Venido	When, or God grant I shall or have come, &c.
Plur.	Huviéredeis Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Venir,

To come.

Future.

Future.

Havér de venir,

To be to come.

Gerund.

Viniéndo,

Coming.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que viéne,

He that comes.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Venido,

Come.

The Compounds of this Verb *Venir*, are declined in every respect in all Moods and Tenses throughout as their original; as *Revenir*, to return, *Revengo*, *Revine*, &c. *Convenir*, to agree, *Convengo*, *Convine*, &c. *Devenir*, to become, *Devengo*, *Devine*, &c. *Sobrevenir*, to come upon suddenly, *Sobrevengo*, *Sobrevine*, &c.

The Irregular Verb, Decír, To say.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Digo Dices Dice	I say You say He says
Plur.	{ Decimos Decis Dicen	We say Ye say They say

N

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Decía Decías Decía Decíamos	I did say You did say He did say We did say
Plur.	Decíadeis, or decíais Decían	Ye did say They did say

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Dixi Dixiste Díxo Diximos	I said You said He said We said
Plur.	Dixisteis Dixerón	Ye said They said

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	He, or húve dicho Has dicho Ha dicho	I have said You have said He has said
Plur.	Hémos dicho Havéis dicho Han dicho	We have said Ye have said They have said

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havia Havías Havia Haviamos	Dicho,	I had said You had said He had said We had said Ye had said They had said
Plur.	Haviadeis Havian		

First Future.

Sing.	Diré Dirás Dirá Dirémos	I shall or will say You shall or will say He shall or will say We shall or will say
Plur.	Diréis Dirán	Ye shall or will say They shall or will say

Second

the SPANISH GRAMMAR. 179
Second Future.

Sing.	{ He, or tengo de decir Has de decir	I am to or must say You are to or must say
	{ Ha de decir	He is to or must say
Plur.	{ Hemos de decir Havéis de decir	We are to or must say Ye are to or must say
	{ Han de decir	They are to or must say

the rest as in other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Di tu, or dice tu Diga el	Do thou say Let him say
	{ Digámos nosotros	Let us say
Plur.	{ Décid vosotros Digan ellos	Do ye say Let them say

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.

When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Diga Dígas Diga	When, or God grant I do say, &c.
	{ Digámos	
Plur.	{ Digáis Digan	
	{	
	{	
	{	

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Dixéra, dixéssse, diría Dixéras, dixéssses, dirías	When, or would to God I did say, &c.
	{ Dixéra, dixéssse, diría	
	{ Dixéramos, dixésssemos, diríamos	
Plur.	{ Dixéradeis, dixéssedeis, diríadeis	
	{ Dixéran, dixéssen, diríán	
	{	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Háya dícho Háyas dícho Háya dícho	{ When, or God grant I have said, &c.
	{ Hayámos dícho	
Plur.	{ Hayáis dícho	
	{ Hayán dícho	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviéssse Huviéras, or huviéssses	{ Dicho, { When, or would to God I had said, &c.
	{ Huviéra, or huviéssse	
Plur.	{ Huviéramos, or huviésssemos	
	{ Huviéradeis, or huviéssedcis	
	{ Huvié..., or huviéssen	

First Future.

Sing.	{ Dixére Dixéres	{ When, or God grant I shall or will say, &c.
	{ Dixére	
Plur.	{ Dixéremos	
	{ Dixéredeis	
	{ Dixéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres	{ Dicho, { When, or God grant I shall have said, &c.
	{ Huviére	
Plur.	{ Huviéremos	
	{ Huviéredeis	
	{ Huviéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Deceit,

To say.

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér dicho, *To have said.*

Future Tense.

Avér de decir, *To be to say hereafter.*

Gerund.

Diciéndo, *Saying.*

Participle Active of the Present Tense.

El que dice, *One saying.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Dicho, *Said.*

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, or esperá de decir, *He that is to say hereafter.*

The Compounds of this Verb *Decir*, in all Points, through all Moods and Tenses, are declined like the Simple, as,

Bendecír, *to bless,*
Maldecír, *to curse,*
Desdecír, *to unsay,*

Bendigo, Bendíxe.
Maldigo, Maldixe.
Desdigo, Desdixe.

The Irregular Verb, Ir, To go.

Indicative Mood..

Present Tense.

Sing.	Voi Vas Va	I go You go He goes We go Ye go They go
Plur.	Vaino Vais Van	

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Iba Ibas 'Iba	I did go You did go He did go We did go Ye did go They did go
Plur.	Ibamos Ibais Iban	

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Fuí Fúiste Fué	I went You went He went We went Ye went They went
Plur.	Fuimos Fúisteis Fuerón	

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	He, er huve Has Ha	'Ido,	I have gone, &c.
Plur.	Hémos Haveís Han		

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havía Havías Havía Havíamos Havíadeis Havían	} 'Ido,	{ I had gone, &c.
Plur.			

First Future.

Sing.	Iré Irás Irá Irémos	} I shall or will go, &c.
Plur.	Iréis Irán	

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or tengo de ár Has de ir Ha de ir	} I must or am to go, &c.
Plur.	Hémos de ir Havéis de ir Han de ir	

the Rest of the Futures as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	Ve tu Váya el	Do you go
	Vámonos nosótrous	Let him go
Plur.	Id vosótrous	Let us go
	Váyan éllos	Do ye go

Let them go

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense

Sing.	Váya Váva	{ When, or God grant I do go, &c.
	Vaya Váyamos	
Plur.	Váyais Váyan	{ When, or God grant I do go, &c.

Preterimperfect Tense.

Sing.	Fuéra, fuéssle, iría	{ When, or would to God I did go, &c.	
	Fueras, fuéssles, irías		
	Fuéra, fuéssle, iría		
Plur.	Fuéramos, fuéssemos, iríamos		
	Fuéradeis, fuéssedeis, iríadeis		
	Fuérán, fuéssen, irían		

Preterperfect.

Sing.	Háya Háyas	{ ido, { When, or God grant I have gone, &c.
	Háya	
	Hayámos	
Plur.	Hayáis Háyan	

Two Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	Huviéra, or huviéssle	{ ido, { When, or would to God I had gone, &c.	
	Huviéras, or huviéssles		
	Huviéra, or huviéssle		
	Huviéramos, or huviéssemos		
Plur.	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis		
	Huviérán, or huviéssen		

First Future.

Sing.	Fuére Fuéres Fuére Fuéremos Fuéredeis Fuéren	When, or God grant I shall or will go, &c.
Plur.		

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren	When, or God grant I shall or will have gone, &c.
Plur.		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Ir, To go.

Preterperfect.

Haver édo, To have gone.

Future Tense.

Havér de ir, To be to go hereafter.

Gerund.

Yéndo, Going.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que va, He that is going.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

ndo, Gone.

The

The Irregular Verb, Oír, To hear.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ 'Oigo 'Oyes Oye Oimos	I bear You bear He bears We bear
Plur.	{ Ois 'Oyen	Ye bear They bear

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Oía Oías Oía Oíamos	I did bear You did bear He did bear We did bear
Plur.	{ Oíais Oian	Ye did bear They did bear

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Oí Oiste Oyó Oimos	I heard You heard He heard We heard
Plur.	{ Oistéis Oyéron	Ye heard They heard

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{ He, or hûve Has	{ }	Oido, { I have heard, &c.
	Ha		
	Hémos		
Plur.	Havéis		
	Han		

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havía Havías Hayía Havíamos Havíadeis Havían	Oído,	<i>I had beard, &c.</i>
-------	---	-------	-----------------------------

First Future.

Sing.	Oiré Oirás Oirá Oirámos Oiréis Oiran	I shall, or will bear, &c.
-------	---	----------------------------

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or tengo de oír Has de oír Ha de oír Hémos de oír	I must, or am to bear, &c.
Plur.	Havéis de oír Han de oír	

the Third and Fourth as in other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	'Oye tu 'Oiga aquél Oigámos nosotros	<i>Do you hear Let him hear Let us hear</i>
Plur.	Oid vosotros 'Oigan aquéllos	<i>Let ye hear Let them hear</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods with the *Spirits.*

{ Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.
 { When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Oiga</i> <i>Oigas</i> <i>Oiga</i> <i>Oigamos</i> <i>Oigais</i> <i>Oigan</i>	<i>When, or God grant I do bear, &c.</i>
---	--

Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Oyéra, oyéssé, or oiría</i> <i>Oyéras, oyéssés, or oirías</i> <i>Oyéra, oyéssé, or oiría</i> <i>Oyéramos, oyéssémos, or oiríamos</i> <i>Oyéradeis, oyéssedeis, or oriadeis</i> <i>Oyéran, oyéssen, or oirían</i>	<i>When, or would to God I did bear, &c.</i>
--	--

Preterperfect Tense.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Haya</i> <i>Hayas</i> <i>Haya</i> <i>Hayamos</i> <i>Hayás</i> <i>Háyan</i>	<i>Oido,</i>	<i>When, or God grant I have heard, &c.</i>
--	--------------	---

Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Huvierá, or huviéssé</i> <i>Huvierás, or huviéssé</i> <i>Huviera, or huviéssé</i> <i>Huvieramos, or huviéssémos</i> <i>Huvieradeis, or huviéssédeis</i> <i>Huvierán, or huviéssé</i>	<i>Oido,</i>	<i>When, or would to God I had heard, &c.</i>
--	--------------	---

First Future.

Sing.	Oyére Oyéres Oyére Oyéremos	When, or God grant I shall, or will bear, &c.
Plur.	Oyéredeis Oyéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré Huviéres, Huviére Huviéremos	Oido,	When, or God grant I shall or will have heard, &c.
Plur.	Huviéredeis Huviére		

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Oír,

To hear.

Preterperfect.

Havér oido,

To have heard.

Future.

Havér de oír,

To be to bear hereafter.

Gerund.

Oyéndo,

Hearing.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

Oyénte, or el que oye,

He that is hearing.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Oido,

Heard.

The

The Irregular Verb, Herir, To hurt or wound.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Hiéro Hières Hiére	I wound
	{ Herimos Herís	You wound
	{ Hiéren	He wounds
Plur.		We wound
		Ye wound
		They wound

All the other Tenses of the Indicative Mood are as in Verbs Regular; as

Preterimperfect.

Hería, Herías, &c.

I did wound, &c.

First Preterperfect.

Herí, Heriste, &c.

I wounded, &c.

Second Preterperfect.

He, has, &c. herido,

I have wounded, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

Havia, havías, &c. herido,

I had wounded &c.

First Future.

Heriré, Herirás, &c.

I will or shall wound, &c.

Second Future.

He oír téngo, &c. de herir,

I, &c. am to or must wound, &c.

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Hiére tu Hiéra el	<i>Do you strike or wound</i> <i>Let him strike or wound</i>
Plur.	{ Hirámos nosóotros Heríd vosóotros Hiérán ellos	<i>Let us strike or wound</i> <i>Do ye strike or wound</i> <i>Let them strike or wound</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.

When, God grant, Though.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Hiéra Hiéras Hiéra	<i>When, or God grant I do wound, &c.</i>
	Hirámos	
Plur.	Hiráis	
	Hiérán	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{ Hiriéra, hiriéssse, or heriría Hiriéras, hiriéssses, or herirías	<i>When, or would to God I did wound, &c.</i>
	Hiriéra, hiriéssse, or heriria	
Plur.	Hiriéramos, hiriésssemos, or heriríamos	
	Hiriéradeis, hiriéssfedeis, or heririadeis	
	Hiriéran, hiriéssen, or heririan	

Future.

Sing.	{ Hiriére Hiriéres	<i>When, or would to God I shall or will wound, &c.</i>
	Hiriére	
Plur.	Hiriércemos	
	Hiriéredeis	
	Hiriéren	

The other Tenses as in Regular Verbs. The Infinitive Mood the same. The Gerund *Hiriéndo*, Wounding.

The

The Irregular Verbs, *Dormír*, to sleep,
Morir, to dye.

Dormír, To sleep.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Duérmo Duérmes Duérme	I sleep You sleep He sleeps
Plur.	{ Dormímos Dormís Duérmen	We sleep Ye sleep They sleep

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Dormía Dormías Dormía	I did sleep You did sleep He did sleep
Plur.	{ Dormíamos Dormíadeis Dormian	We did sleep Ye did sleep They did sleep

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Dormí Dormiste	I slept You slept
	{ Durmió	He slept
Plur.	{ Dormimos Dormisteis	We slept Ye slept
	{ Durmieron	They slept

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{ He, or húve dormido Has dormido Ha dormido	I have slept You have slept He has slept
Plur.	{ Hemos dormido Havéis dormido Han dormido	We have slept Ye have slept They have slept

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Havía Havías Havía Havíamos	{ Dormido, I had slept, &c.
Plur.	{ Havíadeis Hayan	

First Future.

Sing.	{ Dormiré Dormirás Dormirá Dormirémos	{ I shall or will sleep, &c.
Plur.	{ Dormiréis Dormirán	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ He, or téngo de dormir Has de dormir Ha de dormir Hémos de dormir Havéis de dormir de dormir	{ I am to or must sleep, &c.
-------	---	------------------------------

The other Futures as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Duérme tu Duérma	Do you sleep
	{ Durmámos	Let him sleep
Plur.	{ Dormid	Let us sleep
	{ Duérman	Do ye sleep
		Let them sleep

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunqué, Oxalá.
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>{ Duérma Duérmas Duérma Durmámos</i>	<i>{ When, or God grant I do sleep, &c,</i>
Plur.	<i>{ Durmáis Duérman</i>	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	<i>{ Durmiéra, durmiéssle, or dormiría Durmiéras, durmiéssles, or dormirías Durmiéra, durmiéssle, or dormiría</i>	<i>{ When, or would God I did sleep</i>
Plur.	<i>{ Durmiéramos, durmiéssimos, or dormiríamos Durmiéradeis, durmiéssedeis, or dormiríadeis</i>	
	<i>Durmiéran, durmiéssen, or dormirían</i>	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	<i>{ Haya dormido Hayas dormido Haya dormido</i>	<i>{ When, or God grant I have slept, &c.</i>
Plur.	<i>{ Hayámos dormido Hayáis dormido Háyan dormido</i>	

Two Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	<i>{ Huviéra, or huviéssle Huviéras, or huviéssles Huviéra, or huviéssle</i>	<i>{ Dormido, When, or would to God I had slept, &c.</i>
Plur.	<i>{ Huviéramos, or huviéssimos Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis</i>	
	<i>Huviéran, or huviéssen</i>	

First Future:

Sing.	Durmiére Durmiéres	When, or God grant I shall or will sleep, &c.
	Durmiére	
	Durmiéremos	
Plur.	Durmiéredeis	
	Durmiéren	
	Durmiéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré Huviéres	When, or God grant I shall or will have slept, &c.
	Huviére	
	Huviéremos	
Plur.	Huviéredeis	
	Huviéren	
	Huviéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

To sleep.

Preterperfect.

To have slept.

Future Tense.

To be to sleep.

Gerund.

Durmiéndo,

Sleeping.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

Dormiente, or el que Duerme,

He that is sleeping.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Dormido,

Slept.

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, or espéra de dormir,

About to sleep hereafter.

Morir,

To dye.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Muéro	I dye
	Muéres	You dye
	Muére	He dyes
	Morímos	We dye
Plur.	Morís	Ye dye
	Muéren	They dye

Preterimperfect Tense.

Sing.	Moría	I did dye
	Morías	You did dye
	Moría	He did dye
	Moriamos	We did dye
Plur.	Moriais	Ye did dye
	Morian	They did dye

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Morí	I dy'd
	Moríste	You dy'd
	Murió	He dy'd
	Morimos	We dy'd
Plur.	Morísteis	Ye dy'd
	Muriéron	They dy'd

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	He, or húve muerto	I have dy'd
	Has muerto	You have dy'd
	Ha muerto	He has dy'd
	Hemos muerto	We have dy'd
Plur.	Havéis muerto	Ye have dy'd
	Han muerto	They have dy'd

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havía Havías Havía Havíamos	Muerto,	I had dy'd, &c.
Plur.	Haviadeis Havían		

First Future.

Sing.	Moriré Morirás Morirá Morirémos	I shall, or will dye, &c.
Plur.	Moriréis Morirán	

Second Future.

Sing.	He or tengo de morir Has de morir Ha de morir Hémos de morir Havéis de morir Han de morir	I am to, or must dye, &c.
-------	--	---------------------------

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	Muere Muéra	Do you dye
	Murámos	Let him dye
Plur.	Morid	Let us dye
	Muérان	Do ye dye
		Let them dye

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunqué, Oxalá.
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Muéra Muéras Muéra Murámos	When, or God grants I do dy'e, &c.
Plur.	Muráis Muéran	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	Muriéra, muriéssle, or moriría Muriéras, muriéssles, or morirías Muriéra, muriéssle, or moriría	When, or would God I did dy'e
Plur.	Muriéramos, muriésslemos, or moriríamos Muriéradeis, muriéssledeis, or moriríadeis Murieran, muriésslen, or morirían	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	Haya muérto Hayas muérto Haya muérto	When, or God grant I have dy'd, &c.
Plur.	Hayámos muérto	
	Hayáis muérto Hayan muérto	

Two Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	Huiéra, or huiéssle Huiéras, or huiéssles Huiéra, or huiéssle	Muérto,	When, or would to God I had dy'd, &c.
Plur.	Huiéramos, or huiésslemos		
	Huiéradeis, or huiéssledeis Huiéran, or huiésslen		

First

First Future.

Sing.	Muriére Muriéres Muriére Muriéremos Muriéredeis Muriéren	When, or God grant I shall, or will dye, &c.

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren	Muérto, When, or God grant I shall, or will have dy'd, &c.

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Morir, To dye.

Haver muerto. To have dy'd.

Future Tense.

Haver de morir, To be to dye.

Gerund.

Muriéndo, Dying.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que muére, He that is dying.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Muérto, Dyed.

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que há, or espéra de morir, About to dye hereafter.

The following Irregular Verbs of the third Conjugation, change *e* of the Penultima or last Syllable but one of the Infinitive Mood into *i*, in the first, second, and third Persons singular, and the third Person plural of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood; the second and third Persons singular, and the first and third plural of the Imperative Mood; and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive Moods; thus,

Servir, to serve, *Sírvo*, I serve, *Sírves*, *Sírvé*,
Servímos, *Servís*, *Sírvén*. Imperative, *Sírve*, *Sírvá*,
Sírvámos, *Servid*, *Sírvan*. Optative and Sub-
 junctive, *Sírva*, *Sírvas*, &c. All other Tenses in
 each Mood as the regular Verbs. The others that
 are conjugated after this manner; are,

<i>Reír</i> , To laugh,	<i>Río</i> , I laugh,	<i>Ríes</i> , Ríe, &c.
<i>Concebír</i> , To conceive,	<i>Concibo</i> , I conceive,	<i>Concíbes</i> , Concíbe, &c.
<i>Gemír</i> , To sigh,	<i>Gimo</i> , I sigh,	<i>Gímes</i> , Gíme, &c.

The next that follow add *i* before *e* in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above; as

<i>Advertír</i> , To take notice,	<i>Adviérto</i> , I take notice,	<i>Adviértetes</i> , &c.
<i>Arrepentír</i> , To repent,	<i>Arrepiénto</i> , I repent,	<i>Arrepiéntetes</i> , &c.
<i>Consentír</i> , To consent,	<i>Consiénto</i> , I consent,	<i>Consiéntetes</i> , &c.
<i>Mentír</i> , To lie,	<i>Miéndo</i> , I lie,	<i>Míentetes</i> , &c.

The Verbs *Elegír*, To chuse, and *Regír*, To rule, change *eg* into *ij* in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above; thus *Elegír*, *Elijo*; *Regír*, *Rijo*.

Fingír, To feign, and *Ungír*, To anoint, in the same manner make *Finjo*, and *Unjo*, and so in the other Moods, Tenses, and Persons above mention'd.

Seguir, To follow, makes *Sigo*, *Sigues*, *Sigue*, and so in the other Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above.

These that follow in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons above mentioned, are conjugated as here noted.

Conducir, To conduct, *Condúzgo*, *Condúces*, *Condúc*, *Condúcimos*, *Condúcis*, *Condúcon*. Preterperfect, *Condúxe*, *Condúxiste*, &c. Optative and Subjunctive, Present, *Condúzga*. Preterimperfect, *Condúxéra*, or *Condúxéssē*. Future, *Condúxére*. In the same manner, *Introducir*, *Inducir*, *Traducir*, and *Producir*.

Salir, To go out. Present, Indicative. *Sálgo*, *Sáles*, *Sále*, *Salímos*, *Salís*, *Sálen*. Imperative Mood, *Sal*, or *Sále*, *Sálga*, *Salgámos*, *Salid*, *Sálgan*. Optative and Subjunctive Present, *Sálga*, *Sálgas*, &c. The rest Regular.

Of Verbs Passive, *Ser oido*, To be heard.

Indicative.

Present.

Imperfect.

Sing.	<i>Soí oido</i>	<i>I am heard.</i>	<i>'Era oido</i>
	<i>Eres oido</i>		<i>'Eras oido</i>
Plur.	<i>Es oido</i>	<i>I was heard.</i>	<i>'Era oido</i>
	<i>Sómos oídos</i>		<i>'Eramos oídos</i>
	<i>Soís oídos</i>		<i>Erais oídos</i>
	<i>Son oídos</i>		<i>Eran oídos</i>

Perfect.

Sing.	<i>Fuí, or hé sido oido</i>	<i>I have been heard, &c.</i>
	<i>Fuiste, or has sido oido</i>	
	<i>Fué, or ha sido oido</i>	
	<i>Fuimos, or hemos sido oídos</i>	
Plur.	<i>Fuisteis, or habeis sido oídos</i>	
	<i>Fueron, or han sido oídos, &c.</i>	

The Reciprocal thus:

Reirse, To Laugh.

Present

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Me río Te ries Se rie Nos reímos Plur.	{ I laugh. Te reias Se reian Nos reiamos Os reis Se rien
-------	--	---

Preterimperfect.

{ Me reía Te reías Se reían Nos reíamos Os reíadeis Se reian, &c.	{ I was laughing.
--	-------------------

Introducirse, To be introduced.

Present.

Sing.	{ Me introduzgo Te introduces Se introduce Nos introducimos Plur.
	{ Os introducís Se introducen

Imperfect.

{ Me introducía Te introducías Se introducía Nos introducíamos Os intreducíais Se introducían
--

I was introduced.

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Me introduxe, or heme introducido Te introduxiste, or haste introducido Se introduxo, or hase introducido Nos introduximos, or hemosnos introducido Plur.
	{ Os introduxisteis, or os havéis introducido Se introduxeron, or se han introducido

I have been introduced, or I introduced myself.

Imperative.

Sing.	{ Introducete tu Introduzgase el	Be introduced thou Let him be introduced
Plur.	{ Introduzgámonos nosotros Introducé os vosotros Introduzganse aquéllos	Let us be introduced Be ye introduced Let them be introduced

And so in the rest of the Reciprocals, which are terminated in *se* in the Infinitive, except the Impersonal Passive.

Impersonal

Impersonal Actives.

Convenír, To be convenient, fit, or proper.

Indicative.

<i>Pres.</i> Conviéne	<i>It is convenient</i>
<i>Imperf.</i> Convenía	<i>It was convenient</i>
<i>First Perf.</i> Convino	
<i>Second Perf.</i> Ha convenido	<i>It has been convenient</i>
<i>Plusperf.</i> Havia convenido	<i>It had been convenient</i>
<i>First Future,</i> Convendrá	<i>It will be convenient</i>
<i>Second Future,</i> Há de convenir	<i>It must be convenient</i>
<i>Imperative,</i> Convénga	<i>Let it be convenient, &c.</i>

Cumplír, To behove.

<i>Present.</i> Cumple	<i>It behoves.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i> Cumplía	<i>It did behove.</i>
<i>First Perfect.</i> Cumplió	<i>It behoveth.</i>
<i>Second Perfect.</i> Ha cumplido	<i>It has behoved.</i>
<i>Plusperfect.</i> Havia cumplido	<i>It had behoved.</i>
<i>Future.</i> Cumplirá,	<i>It will behove.</i>

and so through the third Person of the other Moods. It is to be observed, that this Verb *Cumplír*, is given here as Impersonal, only in this Signification of Behoving, or being meet; for *Cumplír*, when

when it signifies *to compleat*, or *fulfill*, is a regular Verb, and has all its Persons accordingly.

Of the Impersonal Passives.

Decírse, To be said.

Indicative.

<i>Present.</i> Se dice, or dicese	<i>It is said.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i> Se decía	<i>It was said.</i>
<i>First Perfect.</i> Se dixo	<i>It was, or has been said.</i>
<i>Second Perfect.</i> Se há dicho	<i>It has been said.</i>
<i>Plusperfect.</i> Se havía dicho	<i>It had been said.</i>
<i>Future.</i> Se dirá	<i>It shall, or will be said, &c.</i>

After the same Manner are conjugated,

Escribirse, To be written.

<i>Present.</i> Se escribe,	<i>It is written.</i>
-----------------------------	-----------------------

Referirse, To be related or referred.

<i>Present.</i> Se Refiere,	<i>It is related, or referred, &c.</i>
-----------------------------	--

The Verbs of this Conjugation are likewise declined by the Verb *Estar* and the Gerund, as

'Oigo, or estóy oyéndo, Escribo, or estóy escribiéndo, Pido, or estóy pidiéndo, &c.	<i>I bear, or I am bearing. I write, or I am writing. I beg, or I am begging.</i>
---	---

There

There are likewise some few Defective Verbs in the Spanish Tongue, which are perfect *Latin*, viz.

Sálve, hail, God save you, which is a saluting Verb, much used in their Prayers to the Virgin Mary, and in Poetry, and has no other Tense in Spanish than the Imperative.

Ave, All hail, God save you, &c. is likewise used in Spanish, and found in several Books in a saluting manner, but never used otherwise than at Prayers, &c.

Vále, farewell, adieu, God be with you, is much used by the Spaniards, especially in writing, instead of *Your most Obedient Humble Servant*, and has but two Persons in the Imperative Mood, viz. *Vále*, and *Valéte*.

This may suffice as to Verbs, the Necessity of giving an Account of the Irregulars, and Impersonals having taken up much time.

C H A P. IV.

Of Participles.

ALTHO' there has been said enough of the Participles, as to what concerns the Grammar, in the third Chapter before the Conjugation of Verbs; yet I think it proper to observe,

That this Name *Participle*, comes from the *Latin Participium*, and is so called for its partaking of the Verb and Noun, as it has been said before.

Some are Simple, and others Compound, as

Andante,
Comandante,

Docto.
Indocto.

All the Spanish Verbs have not the Participles Present, and of the Future; and they are supplied by *elque*, and the third Person Singular of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, &c. as it is observed before.

Note, That the Participles of the Present Tense are often made Nouns in Spanish, as *Oyénte*, *Escríbiente*, *Antecedente*, &c.

C H A P. V.

Of Adverbs.

Having treated at large of the four declinable Parts of Speech, we now come to the four that are undeclinable; the first of which is the Adverb, (and so called because it is joined to Verbs, to declare the manner, or the Circumstances of the Action, or Passion; as *el Dánza*, or *Báila bien*, he dances well; *el pudeció cruelmente*, he suffer'd cruelly: it often explains likewise the Nouns, as *un hombre muy sabio*, a very learned Man; *Totalmente impudente*, intirely impudent, &c.)

Of Adverbs there are several Sorts, some being Primitives, as *Si*, Yes; *No*, No, &c. Others are Derivatives, as particularly those which proceed from the Feminine Gender of Adjectives, as from *alta*, high, *altamente*, highly; from *graciosa*, pretty, *graciosamente*, prettily; or from those in *ente*, *z*, *al*, *il*, &c. as *prudentemente*, prudently; *Felizmente*, happily; *Moralmente*, morally; *Facilmente*, easily, &c.

There are Adverbs of Quality, of Quantity, of Time, &c. as may be seen here following,

Adverbs of Quality.

Fielmente, <i>faithfully</i>	Santamente, <i>holily</i>
Buenamente, or bien, <i>well</i>	Fieramente, <i>fiercely, &c.</i>
Malaamente, or mal, <i>ill</i>	

And so the like may be form'd of all Adjectives.

Adverbs of Quantity.

Múcho, <i>much</i>	Pordemás, <i>to no purpose</i>
Poco, <i>little</i>	Demasiado, <i>too much</i>
Mas, <i>more</i>	

Adverbs of Time.

Hói, <i>to day</i>	Núnca, or jamás, <i>never</i>
Ahiér, <i>yesterday</i>	Quándo, <i>when</i>
Mañána, <i>to morrow</i>	Siempre, <i>always</i>
Antehier, <i>the day before yesterday</i>	Entónces, <i>then</i>
Múcho ha, <i>long since</i>	Miéntras, <i>whilst</i>
Poco ha, <i>lately</i>	Súbito, or repentemente, <i>suddenly</i>
Ahóra, <i>now</i>	Tárde, <i>late</i>
'Antes, <i>before</i>	Tempráno, <i>early</i>
Ahún, <i>yet, even</i>	à la tárde, <i>in the evening</i>
Amenúdo, <i>often</i>	A deshóra, <i>unseasonably,</i>
Luégo, <i>forthwith</i>	&c.

Adverbs of Place.

Aquí, <i>here</i>	Delante, <i>before</i>
Allí, <i>there</i>	Atrás, <i>behind</i>
Adónde, <i>where</i>	Aparte, <i>apart, or aside</i>
De dónde, <i>from whence</i>	Arriba, <i>above</i>
Acá, <i>hither</i>	Abajo, <i>below</i>
Acullá, <i>yonder</i>	Cerca, <i>near</i>
Ahí, <i>in that place</i>	Cabe, <i>close by</i>

De aquí, from hence
De allí, from thence.
Dentro, within
Fuera, without

Junto, adjoining
Léxos, far off
Encima, upon
Debáxo, underneath

Adverbs of Affirmation.

Si, yes
Cierto, truly
Ciertamente, certainly
En verdád, in truth

Verdaderamente, truly
También, as well, also
Antes, rather

Of Denying.

No, no, or not
Nada, nothing

Ni, neither
Tampoco, neither

Of Number.

Una vez, once
Dos veces, twice
Tres veces, three times

Muchas veces, often
Pocas veces, seldom
Amenudo, often

Of Shewing.

He aquí, Behold here

Of Encouraging.

Ea, ea pués Go to then

Of Increasing.

Mas,

More

Adverbs of Diminishing.

Menos, less
Poco, little

Pasto, soft and fair

Of

Of Wishing.

Oxalá, would to God

O si, O if it would be

Of Asking.

Porqué, why

De dónde, from whence

Que, what

Quando, when

Dónde, where

Cómo, how

Adónde, whither

Of Doubting.

Quiza, perhaps

Porventura, peradventure

Of Order.

Primeramente, firstly

Aquende, on this side

Después, after

Finalmente, in fine

Allende, beyond

'A lo último } lastly, &c.

Alfin, at the end

'A la Póstre } lastly, &c.

Alcabo, at the end

Of Likeness.

Cómo, as

Así, so

Casi, almost

Tan, tanto, so much, &c.

Of Chance.

A caso, accidentally.

Por dicha, perchance

Of Comparison.

Mas, more

Mejor, better

Ménos, less

Peor, worse

Of gathering together.

Junto, or Juntamente Together
A montones In heaps.

Of Severing.

Aparte Asunder

The Adverb *Hárto*, Enough, varies as to the Gender before Substantives ; for the Spaniards say, *Hárto Pan*, Bread enough, where it is Masculine ; and *Hárta Agua*, Water enough, where it is Feminine : But before Adjectives it always retains the Masculine Termination ; as *Hárto bueno*, and *Hárto buena*, though *bueno* and *buena* are Masculine and Feminine. There are some other Adverbs of the same Sort ; but it would be too tedious to mention all Things.

Note, That the Adjectives are often taken as Adverbs, and then they retain the Masculine Termination ; as *Hágase esto primero*, let this be done first ; *póngase esto derecho*, put this right, or to rights.

C H A P. VI.

Of CONJUNCTIONS.

COnjunctions are a Part of Speech that joins Words and puts Sentences together. Some Conjunctions are Copulative, as uniting Words, and connecting the Sense ; others are Disjunctive, dividing the Sense, and only joining the Expressions ;

sions; others are conditional, shewing the Causes of Things; others Rational or Conclusive, which some call Collective or Illative; and others Adversatives, by which is demonstrated that which we say cannot hurt or obstruct. Besides these, the *Latin* hath others which they call Ordinatives, as also Expletives; but these last only serve for Ornament, for they no way add to, or take from the Discourse.

Conjunctions Copulative are *y* and *e*, signifying *and*; viz. *y* before all Words, excepting those that begin with *i* Vowel, instead of which is put *e*, as we have said in the Observation on the Vowels; *Cómo*, *as*; *También*, also.

Conjunctions Disjunctive are, *Ni*, neither; *O*, or *u*, or, either; *yá*, either, as *yá ésto*, *yá aquéllo*, either this or that.

Causative, as *Porqué*, why, wherefore.

Conditional, *Si*, if; *dádo que*, granting that.

Exceptive, as *Sinó*, if not; *mas*, but; *otramén*, otherwife.

There are others of other Sorts, as *Aloménos*, at least; *Aunque*, although; *tóda vía*, notwithstanding, nevertheless.

CHAP. VII.

Of PREPOSITIONS.

PRepositions are a Part of Speech most commonly set before other parts, either in Apposition; as *ante la justicia*, before a Justice; or else in Composition; as *disponér*, to dispose, *injústo*, unjust.

Those us'd in Composition are *a*, *ad*, *al*, Arabic, *am*, *co*, *com*, *con*, *de*, *des*, *di*, *dis*, *en*, *ex*, *in*, *ob*, *pre*, *pro*, *re*, *se*, *so*, *su*, &c.

In, as *Acanalár*, to cut in Cutters or Channels ; *abatanár*, to full or mill *Clean*.

ad, as *Adveyedízo*, a stranger ; *advertir*, to advertise.

al, *Alcázar*, a Royal Castle or Palace ; *Alquitára*, a Limbeck.

am, *Ampáro*, Protection ; *amparado*, protected.

co, *coberedéro*, coheir ; *co-ordinár*, to co-ordain, or ordain together.

com, *comparár*, to compare ; *comprometér*, to compromise.

con, *convenír*, to agree ; *condescendér*, to descend.

de, *degenerár*, to degenerate ; *deponér*, to depose.

des, *dibacér*, to undo ; *desfigurado*, disfigured.

di, *diferir*, to defer ; *disfundir*, to diffuse, to spread abroad.

dis, *disculpár*, to excuse ; *disponér*, to dispose.

en, *entorpecér*, to grow dull or stupid ; *envergonzár*, to make ashamed.

ex, *exponér*, to expound, interpret ; *expandér*, to spread.

in, *Indignación*, Indignation ; *inferir*, to infer.

ob, *obtenér*, to obtain ; *obtenido*, obtained.

pre, *preponér*, to set before ; *prevenir*, to prevent.

pro, *proponér*, to propose ; *proseguir*, to prosecute.

re, *reedificár*, to rebuild ; *reponér*, to put again.

se, *separár*, to separate ; *separado*, separated.

so, *socorrér*, to succour ; *solicitár*, to solicit.

Su, *suponér*, to suppose ; *suportár*, to support, &c.

These Prepositions following serve to the Genitive Case.

Antes, as *Antes del dia*, before Day-break.

Delante, before, as *Delante del Juez*, before the Judge.

De,

*De, o^r, Muger de Pédro, Peter's Wife, that
Wife of Peter.*

Dentro, within; as *Dentro de mi casa*, within my House.

Detrás, behind ; as *detrás del Cócke*, behind the Coach.

Despues, after; as *despues de esto*, after thi^e.
Báxo, } under; as *llevába un Coléto báxo de su cápa*,
Debáxo } he had on a Buff-Coat, under his
Cloak. *Debáxo de mi Manto*, al
Réy máto, under my Cloak I'll kill
the King.

Abajo, down, below, is an Adverb.
Encima, upon; as *encima del Agua*, upon the Water.
Derredor, round about, as *al derredor de Castillo*,
round about the Castle.

Cerca, near; as *Pedro está cerca de Juan*, Peter is near to John.

Acérca, Though formerly used as a Proposition instead of *Cércā*, it is now used only as an Adverb, and signifies *concerning*, *near*, and governs a Genitive; as *acérca de esto que dice*? what say you concerning this? *los días acérca del Nacimiento de Christo son muy frios*, the Days about or near Christmas are very cold.

Fuéra, out ; as Váya fuéra de mi Cása, go out of my House.

Fuéra, afuéra, without, are Adverbs.
Entorno { about ; as *entorno de mí*, about me, round
Contorno { about me.

Enfrénte, over-against; as *Enfrente de san Pablo*,
over-against St Pauls, &c.

The following serve for the Dative Case,

á to, { as, á Dios sólo se ba de dar la Adoración,
para } for } to God alone we must pay Worship: dí

The RUDIMENTS of

esto à Pédro, I gave th^e paper ; ésto es para mi, this is for me.

And though there are some Authors, who place here the Prepositions *bácia*, towards, and *basta*, even to ; I am of Opinion that they belong to the Accusative, because they are equivalent to the *Latin erga, versus, versum* ; *usque, ad, &c.* and I see no Reason to the contrary.

Prepositions governing the Accusative.

à, as ámo à Dios, I love God ; voy à Róma, I go to Rome. Míre à tal parte, look on such side, toward such a place, and stands por bácia, towards, à modo de Conversación, by way of Conversation, instead of por, by.

Ante, before ; as bói el doce de Júnio pareció ante mi, this Day the twelfeth of June appeared or came before me.

Entre, among, between ; as bablándo entre nosotros, le diré la diferencia, que hái entre las Córtes de Londres y Madrid, speaking between us, (among us) I will tell you the Difference that there is between the Courts of London and Madrid.

Según, according ; as según loque se me dixo, créo, que todo es un embuste, according to what is told me, I believe, that every thing is a fly Lie, Deceit, Falsehood, or Imposition.

Sobre, upon, as todo lo que tengo, lo puedo llevar sobre este Caballo, every thing I have, I can carry it upon this Horse.

Hasta, until, even to ; as Pasearé hasta las ocho de la Nocche, I will walk until nine a Clock in the Night ; hasta Mañana, till to-morrow, iré hasta Roma, I will go as far as Rome, even to Rome.

Hacia, towards ; voyme bácia el Río, I go towards the River.

Por, for, by, through; *Consuéleme por amor de* ~~T~~ *infort me for God's sake*; *Las diez ... on quando passába por esta calle*, it struck ten a Clock when I went through this Street. *Le asegúro ésto por mi palabra, por mi vida, por mi Fe*, I assure you this by my Word, by my Life, by my Faith. *Por* is sometimes taken for *para*, but of this we will take notice afterwards.

Cábe, near, as *Le hallé cábe la Ciudad (Cábe, an old Word)* I found him near the City.

En, in; as *espero y creo en Dios*, I hope, and believe in God.

Cóntra, against, as *lo que buebas es contra los Atributos de Dios*, what you do speak is against the Attributes of God, &c.

Prepositions governing the Ablative.

à, as *creo que le Castigarán à pena de Privacion de Oficio*, I believe that they will punish him, with the Privation, or depriving him of his Office or Employment. *Lo hizo à colór de engañarnos*, he has done it with an Intention to deceive under the Colour, &c. *à* is taken here as *en*.

Con, with; *ven con mígo*, come with me.

De, as *Dios formó à Eva de la Costilla, que es hueso tuerto*, God formed Eve from the Rib, which is a crooked Bone. *Vine de Róma*, I came from Rome.

Sin, without. *Lo hice sin ayuda*, I have done it without help.

En, in; *no tengo dinero en el Bolízillo*, I have no Money in the Purse.

Por, for, *Lo hice por ti*, I have done it for you, &c.

C H A P. VIII.

Of INTERJECTIONS.

INTERJECTIONS are Parricles thrown into Discourse, which denote, or show the Passions of the Mind. Of Mirth, or Rejoycing. *A la gála, a la gála.* Which is O fine, O rare, &c.

Wondering; *Valgame Diós,* God help me, which is also usual in a Fright, and upon other Occasions.

Grieving, *Guay, Alas!* or *Ay de mi!* Alas for me.

Withing, *Oxalá,* Would to God, &c.

Ha, ah! bé, as *bé que dices,* he! what you say!

O, as *O Dios!* *O Dolor!* O God! O pain, or grief!

A, as *à Fuláno,* ho, there such a one, &c.

R E M A R K S upon some Spanish Words and Phrases.

ALL Languages have some peculiar Expressions to themselves, which are not the same in other Tongues, and the *Spaniſh* is not without some of that Sort. Having therefore already run through all, that belongs to the usual Parts of Discourse, and their Nature; it will not be improper to add something concerning these Words and Phrases in the *Spaniſh* Tongue, which are not to be found in others.

In the first place, the Preposition *Des* is inseparable from some other Word, and never to be used but

but in Composition, as signifying nothing by itself: to another Word, denotes a Privation or ~~loss~~ the other imports, as the Syllable *Dis* does in some English Words; thus *Hónra*, is Honour, *Deshánra*, Dishonour, or Disgrace: *Dicha*, good Fortune, *Desdicha*, Misfortune. The same Effect it has when join'd with Verbs; as *Hacér*, to make, *Deshacér*, to undo; *Armár*, to arm, *Desarmár*, to disarm.

En is commonly in, as *en casa*, in the House; *en la calle*, in the Street, &c. but in some Cases it has a peculiar Signification, not to be express'd in any other Language, that I know of; as for instance, *Estar en cuérpo*, literally in English is, to be in Body, which is nonsense; but the true Meaning of it, is, to be without a Coat or Cloak for a Man, or for a Woman without a Scarf or a Veil, so that the Body is more expos'd to View, without an upper Garment. *Está en piénas*, literally he is in Legs, which has no Meaning, but it signifies, he is bare legg'd, that is, his Legs are expos'd without Stockings. *Estoi en cárnes*, literally I am in Flesh, but the true Meaning is, I am stark naked, I have nothing to cover my Flesh. *En cuéros*, signifies the same as *En cárnes*, that is stark naked, the Difference being that *en cárnes*, is in naked Flesh, and *en cuéros*, is in naked Skin; much like the English Expression, that a Man is in Buff, when he is stark naked.

En shews, or it notes the last end of a Thing; as *creo en Díos*, I believe in God. When it's found before the Infinitive, then it turns the Infinitive into an English Gerund, as *consiste en bablár bien*, it consists or depends in speaking well. When before a Gerund, it is the same as after and at in English; as *en cenando*, after Supper, or when at Supper; *en confessando la Verdád*, after your confessing the Truth, or when you confess the Truth; it signifies as soon, as *en acabando lo diré*, as soon as I have done I will tell

lit to you. *En despertando, me levantare*, as soon as I wake, I will get up; and then ~~con la lengua~~, or *tan presto que, como, or quando*, as ~~en despertando~~, viz. *Quando despertare*, when I shall, or should wake.

Hidepúta in its Genuine and usual Acceptation, is the Contraction of *Hijo de puta*, Son of a Whore, a most scandalous Word in all Languages, and as such, scarce ever us'd by Spaniards of any Politeness, in its vulgar and true Meaning: Yet as bad as it is in itself, it is become a Sort of Exclamation, mostly us'd by vulgar People, and that in Contempt, and by way of Scorn, as *O hidepúta y que gran personage que es!* O the Son of a Whore, or the Scoundrel, what a great Person he is! to denote a mean Person, a vile Wretch, carrying himself loftily. Yet some, through Ignorance, not reflecting on the Baseness of the Expression, will let it fly without thinking even to commend any thing that surprises them, as *O hidepúta y que bien que lo ba bicho!* where that scandalous word drops without thinking, and the whole imports no more, than, O how bravely he has done it! even as among us, we too often hear a Rake say to his Friend, Damn you Tom, I'm glad to see you! thus cursing him out of meer Affection.

Hidalgo, is a Gentleman, a Man of good Birth, being a Contraction of *Hijo dalgo*, or rather *Hijo de algo*, the Son of something, that is, of a Person of note, or one remarkable for something; not for much Money, which in Spain, does not make a Gentleman, but for something that is honourable; as Virtue, Learning, Wisdom, or Valour.

Vuestra mercéd, (as it is said before) is generally contracted into *Usted* in speaking, and in writing express'd by these two Letters *V. M.* This is a courteous expression to be found in no other Language, being always us'd where there is any Civility, the Spaniards never saying you to one another, which would

would be unmannly ; for *Tu*, you, is only used to a Servant, or from a Superior to some very mean Person. Where the least respect is shown, and this practised even to very indifferent Persons ; they say *Vos*, ye ; and even this is not allow'd of, unless the Person so expressing himself, be much superior to the other. The common word therefore in Discourse between People of any Fashion, or good Manners is *usted*, for *Vuestra mercé*, which has nothing to answer it in English, but is in the Nature of your Worship ; for in speaking to a Nobleman, they use *Vuestra Señoría*, sometimes contracted into *Usía*, your Lordship : *Vuestra Excellenciá*, your Excellency, &c. but they have not the Title of your Grace, as in English. There is another respectful Way of speaking, which is calling a Man by his Name, though speaking to him, *Sea servido de sentárse el Señor Don Juan*, May it please *Don John* to sit down, &c. Where we may also observe, that the word *Don* is also peculiar to the Spanish, formerly a Title more sparingly us'd, and given only to Knights, and Persons of Distinction ; but now grown common to all that can claim any thing of Gentility, but yet not to Tradesmen, and inferior Persons. *Señor*, is like the Latin *Dominus*, either Sir, or Lord, and therefore equivocal ; for they say, *Si Señor*, yes Sir, to the King ; and *Si Señor*, yes Sir, to the least Gentleman ; just as we do, Sir, to the King, and to any other. Yet is *Señor*, a Lord, as has been said ; the which Difference is found by the manner of speaking ; for though in speaking they say, *Señor Don Juan*, *Señor Don Pedro*, yet a Letter must not be superscrib'd, *Ab Señor Don Pedro*, unless he be a Lord ; because then it implies Dignity, and in common speaking it does not. So in speaking to say, *es un Señor*, or *es un gran Señor*, implies that he is a Lord, or a great Lord. However within a Letter, as we begin Sir, so they begin, *Mui Señor mío*, without thereby meaning to give the title of Lord, but as if

if we should say, my good Master or good Sir. Much more may be said to this, but this Place will not allow of it; these few Instructions are convenient for Learners, that they may not only speak true Spanish, but with good manners, and politely.

Fulanó, *zutáno* or *citáno*, with their Diminutives *Fulanico*, or *Fulanillo*, *zutanico* or *citanico*, and *citanillo*, are Words us'd to signify a third Person namelgfs, as we say, such a one, and all of them import the same: the two first being us'd to express two distinct Persons, not named, as such a one, and such a one; the first of them always us'd if only one Person be spoke of, and the second never but when there is occasion to mention two. They are often us'd in the Feminine Gender, as *Fulána*, *citána*.

Abáxo, in it's own Sense signifies below, and *Debáxo*, under; but as apply'd, the first may have the same meaning with the latter; as *De Diós abáxo yó lo bíze bómber*, under God I made him a Man. *Del Rey abáxo no ay mayór Personaje*, next the King there is no greater Person.

A vuéltas, though it seems to come from *vuélvo*, I turn, or return, signifies among; as *A vuéltas de otras cósas le dió una cadéna*: among other things he gave him a chain.

Cábo, properly signifies the end; but it extends to other meanings, as *Estoy al cábo*, in one sense is, I am reduc'd to extremity, either with Sicknes, or Poverty; and the same Words import, I fully understand, or I am entirely apprized of the thing. Again, *Mugér hermosa por el cábo*, is a Woman perfectly beautiful; and *Tomár la cosa mui por el cábo*, is to take a thing in the hardest sensse.

Recáudo, or *Recádo*, for it is written both ways, though most commonly pronounced the latter, is a word of various Significations. *El dinero está à buen recádo*, The Money is safely plac'd, it is in good

good Hands, or safe. *Recádo* pára escribir, the necessaries for writing. *Dile-un recádo*, I deliver'd him a Message. *Buén recádo trábigo*, I come well provided. *Recádo*, is also us'd for a Subpene, and several other ways.

Aldabáda, is properly, a Knock at a Door; but *dar aldabádas*, is sometimes meant of much babling, or talking to no purpose.

A pies juntillas, is a very odd Expression, without any real Signification of it self, and yet there is a way of using it thus, *Créo a pies juntillas*, I positively believe, I am stedfast in the Belief, without asking any further Questions.

Tomár las de villa Diego, is to run away.

Hablár de chacota, to banter, or talk idly, a word seldom us'd, but by way of Contempt of the Person it is applied to.

Dar xabón a la Rópa, to soap Linnen for washing; but *Dar un xabón a una persona*, is what we call to rattle one, to give a severe Reprimand.

A Few Comparisons.

Mas blanco que la Nieve, whiter than Snow.

Mas negro que la Pez, blacker than Pitch.

Mas amargo que la Hiél, more bitter than Gaul.

Mas dulce que la Miél, sweeter than Honiey.

Mas brávo que un León, fiercer than a Lyon.

Mas manso que una ovéja, tamer than a Sheep.

Comparisons to express doing Things impracticable.

Es como dar con el púño en el Ciélo. That is like striking at Heaven.

Es como batear lánzas en la Mar. That is like darting at the Sea.

Es como predicar en Desíerto. It is like preaching in a Desert.

Es

Es cómo cogér agua en Cesto. It is like drawing Water in a Basket.

Es cómo querér bolár sin álas. It is like attempting to fly without Wings.

Es cómo el pérro del Horteláno, que ni cóme las berzas, ni las déxa comér a los otros. He is like the Gardiner's Dog, that neither eat's Cabbage, nor lets others eat it. We say, like a Dog in a Manger, that will neither eat Hay, nor let the Horse eat it.

Observe, That most of the Adverbs Adjectives are turned likewise in Spanish by the Preposition *con*, and the Substantive, as *prudentemente*, prudently, is the very same as *con prudencia*, with prudence.

Atrevidamente, boldly, *con atrevimiento*, with boldness.

Elegantemente, elegantly.

Con elegancia, with elegance.

Dichosamente, happily.

Con dicha, with happiness.

Liberalmente, liberally, *con liberalidad*, with liberality, &c.

There are Degrees of Comparison among the Adverbs, as *Doctamente*, *mas doctamente*, *doctíssimamente*, wisely.

áy, bái, abi.

There are several who make no Difference between *ay* the Interjection, *áy* the Verb, and *áy* the Adverb; but there is a vast one, in their being spelt and pronounced right. The Interjection *áy*, alafs, is rightly spelt, and the Accent is to be on the *á*, and 'tis to be pronounced long; the Verb is written thus *bái*, there is but one Syllable, and to be pronounced as such: the Adverb thus *abi* there; and a strong Accent is to be put on the *i*, as *áy de mi!* *que bái* muchos *Athéos* or *Atheistas* *abi* en Londres, *y témo el ír*, alafs forme! that there are many Atheists there.

there (or in that place *London*) in *London*, and I am afraid to go.

aquí, acá, &c.

Aquí here, in the Place where one stands; *acá*, hither; *por aquí, por acá*, hereabouts; *abi*, there, a little farther; *allá*, thither, to that place; *acullá*, yonder, there, in that place; *por abí por allá*, thereabouts; *por abí por allá*, on that side, that way; and they are join'd to the Prepositions *de*, from, *por*, by; as *de aquí, de acá*, from, hence; *de allá, de acullá*, from, thence; *por aquí*, by here, by this place; *por acá*, by these Parts, in these Parts; *por allá*, by those Parts; *por acullá*, by those other remote Parts or Places.

ánte, ántes.

Ante, before, is a Preposition, as *no conviene bablár así ánte la presencia del Rey*, it is not fit or convenient to speak so, or thus, before the King's Presence: *ánte* is an Adverb, and is used as *ántes*, as in the Law of *la Partida 2, Tit. 4. L. 1.* but at present never used so: It signifies sometimes that which is first in time, or of a greater importance, as *ánte tódas las cosas*, before all things: *ánte* signifies likewise a Buffoloe's Hide, and the Fruit Plates that are served up at Dinner or Supper before the Meat: *ántes* has likewise this last Signification.

Antes, as an Adverb, signifies the preceeding Time or Place; as *lo dixe ántes*, I said it before; *conservó los Criados en los cargos de ántes*, he kept the Servants in the same Places they had before; it is likewise a Preposition Adversative, and signifies rather, as *antes quíero morir que pecár*, I rather love to die, than to sin: It requires likewise a Genitive, as *ántes de la Muerte del Rey apareció un Cometa*, a Comet

224 The RUDIMENTS of
a Comet did appear before the Death of the King,
or the King's Death.

Antes is taken as *antecedente*, preceding, or
before, as *el exército del año ántes nos taló los Campos*,
the Army of the preceeding Year spoiled, ravaged,
or wasted the Fields.

Antes con antes, adverbial. immediately, and more
than immediately, if possible; a sudden diligence,
ex improviso, suddenly, unexpected; as it will be
seen in the severall Phrases that often happen in
Writings.

Antes del día, before Day break; *antesque*, a
Preposition conjunctive, as *antesque vayas a trabajar*,
vete; *à Rezár*, before you go to Work, go to
or do your Prayers.

Ante and *antes* are likewise Prepositions, and help
in the Composition of some Words, but never
change *e* or *es* into *i* as an Author observes wrong-
fully, because we don't say, *Anticámara*, but *Ante-
cámara*, Anti-chamber, *Antesála*, a Room before
the Saloon, or the State Room.

Delante, adelante.

Delante, before, in presence, fronting, is a Pre-
position governing the Genitive, as *vivo delante de la
Lonja*, I live fronting the Change: *este Crimen se comitió
delante del Gobernadór*, this Crime was committed
before the Governor: *Quítate de delante de mi*, go
away, or from thy presence. It is likewise an Adverb,
as *el General va delante*, the General goes at the
Head, or before, &c.

Adelante, an Adverb, signifies fronting, forwards,
before, as *vámos adelante*, let us go on, or forwards. It
signifies Time, when it has before it *en*, *para*, *dé aqui*,
de allí, &c. as *en adelante*, afterward, in time to
come; *para en adelante*, for the time to come; *de
aqui adelante*, from hence forward; *mas adelante*,
farther

farther yet; *de hoí en adelante*, from this time forward, &c.

Aina, áinas.

Aina, Adverb, soon, sooner, as *más áina lo haré yo que tu*, I will do it sooner than you; *tu aprendiste la lección en una hora, pero yo la aprenderé más áina*, you did learn your Lesson in an Hour, but I will learn it sooner. So that *áina* always has *mas* before it.

Ainas, Adverb, almost, near atend; as *áinas me mató*, he almost kill'd me; *estoy áinas de la Muerte*, I am near my Death. These words are but seldom used in Spanish.

Balde, de Balde, en balde.

Balde is a Word used generally in *Andalusia*, and signifies a Bucket to draw Water from a Well, &c. but in Spanish has no Signification, but when in Composition, and then is an Adverb; as *debálde, gratis*, free cost, for nothing, without occasion; as *le hice servido debálde*, I have served him for nothing; *comimos de balde*, we eat free cost; *le castigó de balde*, punished him without occasion. *Enbalde* (not *embalde*, as some do write it carelessly) in vain, without effect; as, *después de todo, nuestro trabajo será enbalde*, after all, our Labour will be in vain; *Prediqué enbalde*, I preached without effect, in vain.

Note, This frequent Expression of some Shop-Keepers to the Buyers; *se lo venderé de balde*, I will sell it to you for nothing, that is, almost for nothing, so cheap that the like will be found nowhere for Cheapness.

Atruéque.

Is an Adverb, *vamos atruéque*, let us change; but when it signifies instead, or in the room of, then it is a Preposition, and requires the Genitive; as, *atruéque de su anillo*, or *sortija*, *le daré la miá*, I will give you my Ring instead, or in the room of yours.

Of Pára and Por.

These Prepositions are often confounded by the Gentlemen that learn the Spanish, nay even by some Spanish Authors, so that I think it necessary to observe that,

Pára, for; serves to denote the Utility, or Detriment to a Person; as *estos cien reales son pára Pedro*, *que es pobre*, these hundred Reals are for Peter, who is poor, or because he is poor. *Los di pára vmd*. I gave them for you; *vine aquí pára bablár con vmd*, I came here to speak with you.

When the English puts *to* before the Infinitive, the Spaniards make use of *de*, *a*, *para*, or *por*; but with this Distinction, that *de* is put before the Infinitive, and when the Verbs *venir*, *havér*, *tenér*, &c. or a Noun is before the Infinitive; as *Vengo de cenar*, I come from Supper; *he de de amár*, I must love; *tengo de ir*, I must go; *tengo necesidád de ser consoládo*, I want to be comforted, &c. when a Verb of Motion preceeds the Infinitive, as *la Léy de Díos me compelle à hacér bien*, Divine Law compels me to do good; *vóli à leer este libro*, I go to read this Book. *Pára*, when the Verb tends to an Habit, Use, Custom, or its Quality, as *o señór! dadme vuestra Grácia*, *y hacédme hábil para amaros*, *constántemente pára sufriér*, *y firme pára perseverár*,

verár, O Lord! give me thy Grace, and make me able to love you, constant to suffer, and firm or stable to continue or persevere. *Por*, and *pára*, when they denote the End that moves or inclines, the Cause and the Means to obtain it; as *sirvo à Díos por gozár de el prémio*, I serve God to enjoy the Reward, or that I may, or in order to enjoy the Reward. *El espíritu málo nos pone amenudo malos pensamientos para desviarnos del camíno de la virtud*, the evil Spirit puts on us often bad Thoughts to set us out of the way of Virtue.

Para is used in questioning and answering, and signifies, for what? why? for whom? to what purpose, &c. as *Paraqué se díxo esto?* to what purpose? to what end, for what is this said? *No bái paraqué*, there is no Reason, no Occasion, no Cause: *Para quien es ésta carta?* *para mí*, for whom is this Letter? for me. *Paraqué* signifies likewise *that*, and is a Sign that denotes the Subjunctive Mood; as, *paraqué yo áme*, that I may love: It expresses also, to what End, Office, or Place, a Thing, or a Person is good for; as *éste Caballero es buéno para Ministro*, *aquélp para Secretario*, *y el otro para Mayor domo*, this Gentleman is good for a Minister, viz. to be a Minister, that for a Secretary, and the other for a Steward. *Este epéjo es bueno para este quárto*, *y aquéllas cortinas para mi cámara*, this Looking-Glass is good for this Room, and those Curtains for my Bed.

It denotes present and future Time; as, *este vestido es buéno para bói*, *pára Mañana*, *y para cada día*, this Suit of Cloth is good for this Day, for Tomorrow, and for every Day: *he comprádo trigo para un año*, I have bought Corn for a Year: *Abóra y para siempre*, *alabémos a Díos*, let us praise God now and for ever. Exceptions, *Para el año passado se compráron estas provisiónes*, *y dúran baun*, these Provisions

visions were bought for last Year, that is, for the service of last Year, and last as yet: *Para ayér (el día de ayér) se hicieron estos Versos*, these Verses were made for Yesterday, that is, to celebrate that Day.

Pára poco, good for little, of small capacity.

Paracon, between us, or in my, or our Opinion; as, *para conmigo es cierto*, in my opinion it is true.

Por sometimes denotes that the Thing is not yet done; as, *esta obra está por acabár*, this Work is not yet finished: *por hacerse*, to be done.

It signifies likewise the End of, or Means to do a Thing; as, *se riñeron pormí*, they quarrelled on my account, &c.

Por, by, for, through: as *Por estos medios lo alcanzó*, he obtain'd it by these Means; *fuí al Banco por ducentas libras*, I went to the Bank for 200 l. *pásemos por ésta calle*, let us go through this Street.

Por, though, although, &c. *por pequeña que sea la tomare*, tho' so small I will take it, altho' it be small I will take it, and then it denotes a Tense in the Optative, as *por dotto que sea*, though he be a learned Man, &c.

In Composition, as *por tál*, so that; *por un tál*, for such a one; *porloque*, *porloqual*, for which; *Pordonde*, which way; *porende*, therefore; *por ésto*, for that Reason; *porque*, why; *por ventura*, peradventure, perhaps. But *pro* for *provécho*, as *buen pro le haga*, much good may it do you: *pro*, *el pro*, the reason of a Thing, as *el pró de las Mugéres*, Women's Reason; *pro y contra*, *pro and con*, for and against; *por acaso*, by chance, by accident; *por dinéro báila el Pérro*, the Dog dances for Money; or as we say in English, Money makes the Mare to go.

Primero, Primo, &c.

Are Adjective Ordinals, but with Distinction; because we use *Primo*, and not *Primero* in the great Numbers, as an Author wrongfully saith; we don't say *vigésimo primero*, but *vigésimo Primo*, 21st; *trigésimo primo*, 31st. *Primero* stands sometimes for *primeramente*; and when it has *lo* before it, it is taken as Substantive: it is often us'd before and after the Substantives, when before them looses *o*, as *primer lugár*, *lugar primero*; when an Adverb it signifies first, before, in the first place, rather; as *primero iré a la Guerra*, *que a la Escuélá*, I rather chuse to serve in the War, then to go to School, &c. *Primo*, the first, the best, chiefest, a delicate curious Thing: *Primo* rarely is join'd to any Substantive, because it stands as a Substantive itself, and varies its Termination, and then signifies a Cousin, as *Primo Hermáno*, a Cousin German; *Prima Hermána*, a she Cousin German: *obra Prima*, curious Work, the best; *lo Primo*, the very best, &c.

N O.

Altho' *no*, be a Negative, in questioning it is a Note of Interrogation; as *me estaré aquí no?* shall I not wait here? *No me bará este favor?* Will you not do me this favour? and then it stands for whether or no.

Tanto, Quanto, tan, Quan.

The Adverbs *Tanto*, so much, as much; *Quanto*, how much, are often put before Substantives, Verbs, &c. to signify the Quantity, Manner, or Circumstances of the Action, &c. as, *por tanto*

comer estás enfermo, you are sick for having eat so much, for over eating ; *Quanto béo me hace mal*, every thing I drink, (all that I drink) does me no good. *Quanto píde por estos guantes?* tanto, how much do you ask for these Gloves ? so much. *Tanto quanto*, every thing, so much as ; *tanto mas*, so much more. *Tanto* signifies likewise a Counter to play : *Quánto*, all, every thing, as *quanto dice es falso*, all, what, or every thing he saith is false ; *quanto mas?* how much more ? *quantos?* how many ? *quanto quiera*, how much soever.

Tán, so, as ; as *aquel Páño es tan bueno como este*, that Cloth is as good as this ; *tiéne tan buenos amigos*, he hath as good Friends : *quán*, how ; as *è quan málo gres*, y *quan bueno te báces entre los Nobles*, O how bad you are, and how good do you make yourself among the Nobility.

Tanbien, so well, as well ; *estó tan bien convalecido*, I am so well recovered : *esto está tan bien hecho como se puéda hacér*, this is as well done as it could be done ; so that *Tanbien* must not be confounded with *Tambien*, as an Author does, because *también* signifies also, and not as well.

Además.

The Adverb *Además*, signifies, besides, moreover, over and above, in vain ; as *Además, conviene saber que*, besides, moreover, it is to be known that ; *pensativo además quedó Don Quixote, esperando, &c.* over and above thoughtful remain'd Don Quixote, waiting, &c. Vol. II. Chap. III. *Además se cansa*, takes pains in vain. *Pordemás*, that is, in vain, to no purpose ; it governs likewise Genitive, as *ademas de esto*, besides this, &c.

Según, when before a Verb is an Adverb, and signifies according, as ; as *Según dice Don Juan*, as Sir John

John saith ; it is likewise a Preposition governing the Accusative ; as, *según mi parecer*, according to my Opinion.

Ayúso, an old Adverb, is the same as *abáxo*, below, under ; as *lo echáron ayúso*, they throw'd it down, below, under ; it signifies likewise after and under, as *abáxo* ; as *de Díos en Ayúso*, or *de Díos abáxo yo le curé*, under God, or after God, I am the Person who cured him, or made him well.

Hasta, till, even, up to, as far as ; as, *basta quando?* till when ? *basta que venga*, untill I come ; *basta quanto?* how much ? *basta tanto*, so much ; *basta el borde*, up to the brink ; *basta Palacio*, as far as the Palace ; *basta las doce*, till Noon.

This may serve by way of Specimen, and Practice will teach what can't be so well committed to writing, without far exceeding the Bounds of a Grammar.





THE
SECOND PART
OF THE
SPANISH GRAMMAR,
Called SYNTAX.



HE *Spanish* has so great an Affinity with the *Latin*, that whosoever understands the latter, will find little difficulty in the Construction of the other.

Having hitherto treated of the eight Parts of Speech, as they belong to Etymology, it remains now to treat of them as belonging to the Syntax (called Construction, or the order of Construction.)

C H A P. I.

.Of the Concords and Articles.

THERE are three Concords in the Spanish Speech, viz.

1. Between the nominative Case, and the Verb; as, *yo amo*, I love; *Pédro scribe*, Peter writes.
2. Between the Substantive and the Adjective; as, *hombre curioso*, a curious Man; *Mujer virtuosa*, a virtuous Woman.
3. Between the Antecedent and the Relative, as *Feliz es, quien vive contento*, happy is he who lives contented, or with content.

Of the first Concord.

A Verb personal agreeth with his Nominative Case in Number and Person; as *yo Leo*, *tu Apréndes*, *el Maestro enséña*, I read, thou learns, the Master teaches, &c. Note, That many Nominative Cases, with a Conjunction Copulative between them, will have a Verb Plural; as, *Pédro y Juan viniéron a verme Ayér*, Peter and John came to see me Yesterday.

Sometimes a whole Clause, and the infinitive Mood of a Verb, may be the Nominative to the Verb following; as, *todo lo que se díxo ayér, me movió á tomar ésta resolución*, all that was said Yesterday moved me to take this Resolution: *el comér satisface al hambriento*, to eat, eating, satisfies the Hungry; *el levantarse temprano es saludable*, to rise betime in the Morning, is wholesome.

Exceptions.

Exceptions.

When a Question is asked, then the Nominative goes after the Verb; as, *está el Sr. Fuláno en casa?* is Mr such a one at home? *como se entiende ésto?* how is this understood; *que tiene vmd?* What is the Matter with you? And so in the Negatives, as *no es ésto?* *no es verdád?* Is it not this? is it not true? These Relatives are excepted; *que hora es?* What is it a Clock? *quién es?* who is? *quién toca?* who knocks? *quién lláma?* who calls, &c.

Some of the Reciprocal Verbs, and the Imperatives of all the Verbs have their Nominative after them, as, *pésame mucho,* I am very sorry; *áma tu,* love thou.

When a Verb comes between two Nominatives of diverse Numbers, the Verb may indifferently accord with either of them; as, *tantas palabras juntas es confusión,* or *son confusión,* so many Words together are a Confusion: *las superfluidades son Exceso* Superfluities are an Excess.

Of the Second Concord.

The Adjective, whether it be a Noun, Pronoun, or Participle, agreeth with his Substantive in Case, Gender, and Number; as, *el bómbole sábio,* y *la Mugér virtuósa son dignos de alabánza,* a learned Man, and a virtuous Woman are worthy of praise by which you see how they agree, and that the Masculine Gender is more worthy than the Feminine; and so it is said *dignos* and not *dignas:* It is likewise plain by the above Example, that, many Substantives with a Conjunction copulative between them will have an Adjective Plural.

When

When a Clause serves as a Substantive, then the Adjective is to be put in the Neuter Gender ; as, *el Rogár a Díos en todo tiempo es bueno* ; *pero en tiempo calamitoso es necesario*, it is always good to pray to God ; but in calamitous time it is necessary.

Exceptions.

Before the Nouns Substantives beginning with *a*, *Euboniæ gratia*, for the sake of the good Sound, the Spaniards use the Masculine Article, as has been said before, as *el agua*, the Water ; *al alma*, the Soul ; which proceeds from the Spaniards not using the Apostrophe, as some other Nations do, &c.

After *Vuestra Merced* the Adjective does not agree in Gender with *v.m.d.* but with the Person to whom one speaks, as we observ'd before ; so that when we speak to a Man, we say, *bien venido sea v.m.d.* Sir you art welcome ; and in the Plural, *bien venidos sean v.mdes.* Gentlemen you are welcome ; when to a Woman, *vmd. es muy buena*, Madam you are very good, &c.

Note, That *Bueno*, *malo*, *úno*, *primero*, *tercero*, &c. when before a Substantive, they lose the Letter *o* ; and *ciento* loses *to* : and tho' some Authors are of Opinion, that *tanto* and *quanto* lose *to* before the Substantives, I say, that it is false, and wrong ; because *tanto* and *quanto* always remain whole, and are derived of the Latin Adverbs *Tanto*, *quanto* ; as, *quanto Mayor eres*, *tanto mas te humillarás*, how much the greater you are, so much the more you should be humbled. But *tan* and *quán* are derived from the Latin *tam* and *quam*.

Grande, loses *de* before the Substantives that begin with a Consonant ; as, *gran Mugér*, a great Woman ; *Gran Cája*, a great House : but if the Substantive begins with *a* then it is often indifferently

differently used, and when begins with another Vowel always retains *de*.

Observe likewise, that the Spaniards do generally use the Adjectives after the Substantives, as it has been said: but the Epithets are used by the best Spanish Authors before the Substantives; as, *el Seráfico San Francisco*, the Seraphick St. Francis; *el Melifluo St Bernardo*, the Mellifluous St. Bernard; *el intrépido General*, the intrepid General; *el Philósofo Aristóteles*, the Philosopher Aristotle; *Sanísimo Padre*, *Beatísimo Padre*, the Holy Father; *Excelentísimo Señor*, most excellent Sir; *ilustísimo Señor*, most illustrious Sir, &c. and so we say *es buen hombre*, he is a good Man; *este es un mal hombre*, this is a bad Man.

Of the third Concord.

The Antecedent is a Word, or Clause that goes before the Relative, and is rehearsed again by the Relative.

The Relative agreeth with his Antecedent in Gender, Number and Person; as, *es fabio, quien habla poco y bien*, that Man is wise, that speaketh but little and to the purpose.

When a Relative is between two Antecedents of diverse Genders, then it agreeth with either; as, *el Rey se irá luégo a una casa de campo, la que está en Windsor*, the King will soon go to a Country House, which is at Windsor; *he recibido tres cartas, cuyo contenido me gusta mucha*, I have receiv'd three Letters, whose Contents please me much; *atacaron al Enemigo, cuya infantería tomó luégo la derrota*, they attack'd the Enemy, whose Foot soon gave way and fled.

Sometimes the Relative hath for his Antecedent the whole Sentence that goeth before it, and then it must be put in the Neuter Gender, and in the Singular

lar Number ; as, *alzáronse los soldados en el fuerte contra su Gobernador, lo que le obligó a entregarle,* the Soldiers revolted in the Fort or Fortress against their Governor, which oblig'd him to deliver it up.

Many Antecedents Singular having a Conjunction Copulative between them, will have a Relative Plural, which shall agree with the Antecedent of the most worthy Gender ; as, *recibí el Caballo y la Mula que me embió, losque presenté al Sr. Fulano,* I receiv'd the Horse and the Mule that you sent me, which I presented to Mr such a one.

When there is no Nominative between the Relative and the Verb, then the Relative stands for the Nominative ; as, *quien dice esto ?* who saith this ? but when there is a Nominative between the Relative and the Verb, then the Relative shall be put in the Case governed by the Verb, or any other Word ; as, *la gracia que le pido,* the Favour which I beg of you ; *el Rey á quien obedisco,* the King to whom I obey ; *el Embaxadór, de cuya protección gózo,* me escribe ésta carta, the Embassador whose Protection I enjoy, wrote this Letter to me.

Note, that the Relatives you may make use of, are *le, les, la, lo, las, los* ; (to these four last you may add *qué* ; as, *la que, lo que, la que, losque*) *quién, tal, qual, cuyo, que* ; to which you may likewise add a Preposition ; as, *á lo que Digo,* to which I say ; *de lo que recibí gusto,* of which I received Pleasure ; *de quién es ?* to whom it belongs ? *pára quién ? para él ?* for whom ? for him ; *cuyo es éste sombréro ?* then you may answer, *mío, tuyo, or suyo, or del Sr. Fulano, de aquel Caballero,* mine, thine, or yours, or of Mr such a one, of that Gentleman.

Observe likewise, that these Relatives are called elliptic Articles, because they express the Substantive which is not there ; as, *recibí la de v. md,* *la* for *la carta,* I received yours ; *leí los libros de Quevedo,* pero los del Padre Feijoo no, I read Quevédos

do's Books, but not those of Father Feijoo ; and then they govern the Case of the Substantive ; as *recibí la de Pedro*, *pero no la de Juán*, I receiv'd that of Peter's, but not that of John, &c.

Of the Articles.

There are three Articles in Spanish, as is said before, viz. *el* for the Masculines, *la* for the Feminines, and *lo* for the Neuters ; and it can't be taken amiss, if I shew here the manner how they are to be used.

First, All proper Names of Men, Women, Gods, Goddesses, Angels good or bad ; of Months, Cities, Towns, and Villages, &c. have no Article before them ; as, *Philip V. Rey de España Luis XV. Rey de Francia* ; *Jorge II. Rey de Inglaterra*, &c. Philip V. King of Spain, &c. *Carolina Reina de Inglaterra*, Calorine Queen of England : *Jupiter*, *Juno*, *Lucrécia*, St. Miguél, St Michael ; *Enero*, January ; *Febrero*, February, &c.

Secondly, If we put an Adjective between proper Names, or express their Epithets, or specify some Action, Passion, or Motion, and take notice of their Qualities, &c. then we put the Article before them ; as, *el Omnipotente Dios*, *el Dios de Misericordia* ; the Almighty God, the God of Mercy ; *el invencible e intrépido General*, the invincible, and intrepid General : *el Rey, la Reina, el Príncipe, la Princesa, y el Duque de Cumberland irán à la comedia éste noche*, the King, the Queen, the Prince, the Princess, and the Duke of Cumberland will go to the Play-house this Night ; and so before other common Words.

Thirdly, Before the Numerals is never made use of the Article, but when they are taken relatively ; as, *los dos viniéreron*, the two came ; *los doce meses del año*, the twelve Months of the Year ; *los siete días de la*

de la semána, the seven Days of the Week; *las dce Tríbus*, los doce Apóstoles, los doce pares de Fráncia, las quátro partes del Mundo, &c. and so are *uno*, *otro*, *qual*, the Participles, and some of the Infinitives; as, *el uno*, the one, &c. *lo dicho*, the above said, *el comér*, *el beber y el dormir*, *con Moderación*, *bacén bien al cuérpo*, to eat, to drink, and to sleep with Moderation, does good to the Body.

The Particle *an* so much us'd in English is omitted in Spanish; for tho' we say, another Man, another Day, they only say as the Latin, *otro hombre*, *otro día*, not *un otro hombre*, or *un otro día*.

España has but seldom an Article, and Serdëña, Portugál, Sicilia, and cándia never.

C H A P. II.

Of the Construction of Nouns.

WHEN two Substantives of diverse Significations, do so come together, that the Latter in some kind or other seem to be possessed, or depend of the former, then the latter is put in the Genitive Case; as, *el amor de Dios es mas perfección*, the Love of God is the most perfect: *amor del Padre*, the Love of a Father; *la Ternéza de la Madre*, the Tenderness of a Mother; *la Eloquencia de Cicerón*, the Eloquence of Cicero, &c. And often this Genitive is turned into an Adjective; as, *el amor Divino*, the Divine Love; *el Amor Paterno*, the fatherly Love; *la Ternéza Materna*, the Motherly Tenderness, &c.

An Adjective in the Neuter Gender put alone without a Substantive, standeth for a Substantive, and

and may have a Genitive Case after it; *déme un poco de lo mucho, y algo de lo poco*, give me a little of the much, and something of the little you have; *lo prudente de Don Pedro nos admira*, the prudent Part of Don Peter surprises us, &c.

The Nouns of Praise, and Dispraise, of Want, of Arts, Sciences, all proper Names of Cities, Towns, &c. of God, all proper Names of Men, Women, Spirits good and bad, of irrational Creatures, of inanimates, of Months, Nouns of Measure, &c. coming after a Noun Substantive, or a Verb Substantive may be put with the Preposition *de*; as *Muchacho de buen ingenio*, a Boy of a good Wit; *hombre de mal crédito*, a Man of bad Credit or Reputation; *Maestro de Musica*, a Master of Music; *Profesor de Teología*, a Professor of Divinity; *la Casa de Pedro*, Peter's House; *la ciudad de Londres*, the City of London; *la voluntad de Dios*, the Will of God, &c.

Sometimes the Genitive Case is put alone, the former Substantive being understood by Eclipsis; as *recibí dos Cartas, la de Pedro leí, pero no la de mi Correspondiente*, I receiv'd two Letters, I read that of Peter's, but not that of my Correspondent.

Of the Construction of Adjectives.

Adjectives that signify Desire, Knowledge, Remembrance, Ignorance, or Forgetting, and such other like require a Genitive; as *codiciosa de dinero*, covetous of Money; *ignorante de todo*, ignorant of all things, &c.

Nouns Partitives, and certain Interrogatives, with certain Nouns of Numbers, require Genitive; as *algún, ninguno, solo, uno, qualquier, dos, tres, Primero, segundo, &c.* *algún de vosotros*, somebody of you, *el primero de vosotros*, the first of you.

Rómulo

Rómulo fue el Primero de los Reyes de Roma, Romulus was the first of the Kings of Rome; *de que se tráta en Londres?* *de Guerra,* what are you about in London? or what talke you in London? of War; *de quien se bábla?* *de los Turcos,* of whom speak they? of the Turks.

Adjectives signifying Fullness, Emptiness, Plenty, or Want, require *de*; as, *lleno de agua*, full of Water; *saltó de juicio*, without his Senses. And sometime they require the Preposition *en*; as *abundante de todo*, or *en todo*, plentiful, or well stored with every Thing; *Rico de bienes*, or *en bienes temporales*, *y Pobre de los*, or *en los espirituales*, rich in temporal Goods, and poor in the spiritual, &c.

Digno, and *indigno*, require a Genitive; as, *sói digno*, or *indigno de honra*, I am worthy or unworthy of Honour. But *adornado*, *contento*, *descontento*, *alegre*, &c. will have *de* or *con*, as, *este quarto está adornado de preciosas alájas*, or *con preciosas alájas*, this Room is adorned with fine Furniture; *Contento* and *Descontento*, require likewise *en*, as, *estói contento de ésto*, *con ésto*, or *en ésto*, I am contented with this, &c.

Adjectives, whereby is signified Profit, Disprofit, Likeness, Unlikeness, submiting or belonging to something, govern a Dative Case; as, *útil*, *provechoso*, *cómodo*, *Bueno*, *conveniente*, *gustoso*, *malo*, *rendido*; *igual*, *desigual*, *semejante*, *parecido*, *confórme*, &c. as, *será útil à Pedro el trabajár*, working will be profitable to Peter; and so are those of Affinity, which likewise are construed with a Genitive; as, *sói Pariente de Fulano* or *à Fulano*, I am a Relation of, or to such a one.

Add to these some of the Verbals in *ble*, as *amable*, *dable*, &c.

N. B. That the Nouns of Measure of Length, Breadth, or Thickness of any Thing, is put in the Accusative, and the Adjective in the Genitive; as, *esta torre tiene cien pies de alto*, this Tower is one hundred Feet

high; éste Páño tiéne dos várás de áncbo, this Cloth has two Yards in Breadth.

Some Adjectives govern the Ablative Case; as, *con*, or *en la cólera esti amarillo*, *y con la ira colérico*, *y con sus amenázas temeroso*, I am pale for being angry, angry with Wrath, and with his Threatning timorous.

There are Ablatives Absolutes, (so called for their having no dependance in the Speech) as *acabada la cena*, the Supper being finished, or having supt; *quitada la Causa*, *césa el efecto*, the Cause being remov'd, the effect ceased.

The Ablative of the Instrument is made in Spanish with the Preposition *con*, with; as *lo bice con el Martillo*, I have done it with the Hammer.

The Words *experto*, *experimentado*, *Perito*, *versado*, *cursado*, &c. require an Ablative with *en*; as *versado en libros*, versed in Books.

Of the Numerals.

The Numerals may be divided into Cardinals; as, *uno*, *dos*, *tres*, &c.

Ordinals; as, *Primero*, *segundo*, *tercero*, &c.

Distributives, as, *de uno en uno*, *de dos en dos*, *de tres en tres*, &c.

Partitives, as *cada uno*, *uno y otro*, *algún*, &c.

Collectives, as *una docena*, *quincena*, *veintena*, *treintena*, &c. a dozen and no more in English, they saying in its stead twenty, thirty, &c. *el quinto*, the fifth; *la diézma*, a tenth, &c.

Of Augmentation; as *lo doble*, *lo triple*, *lo quadruple*, &c.

Universal, as *todo*, *ningún*, *náda*.

Particular; as, *algún*, *alguien*, &c.

All which govern the Genitive Case; as, *el Primero de todos*, the first of all.

Of the Comparatives.

The Comparatives *mas*, more ; *ménos*, less, govern *que*, than, in which the force of the Comparison lies ; *el todo es Mayór que la parte*, the Whole, or the Compound is greater or bigger than the Part ; *su Malicia es peor que la de el diablo*, it's Malice is worse than that of the Devil's ; and so in *mejor*, *menor*. Now for the Regular Comparatives, *as*, *es* *mas* *sabio que Salomón*, is wiser than Solomon ; *es mas Hermosa que Rachel*, is more beautiful than Rachel ; *es ménos prudente que su Hermano*, is less prudent than his Brother.

They govern likewise *deloque*, than what ; *as*, *es mas Docto deloque se piensa*, is more learned than what it is thought ; *es mas afortunado deloque merece*, is more lucky than what he deserves.

When the Articles *el*, *la*, *lo* are put before *mas*, then it governs the Genitive ; *as*, *es el mas discreto de los hombres*, he is the discreetest of Men ; *la mas afable de todas las Mugeres*, the most affable of all Women ; *lo mas selecto de todo*, the most select of all, of every Thing.

They govern also the Preposition *entre* ; *as*, *es la mas Hermosa entre todas las Mugeres*, is the most beautiful among all Women ; *es el mas Docto entre todos los del Colegio*, is the most learned among all those of the College. Some Spanish Writers put *de* before *entre* ; *as*, *es el mas señalado de entre sus condiscípulos*, is the most signified from among his School-Fellows. By which the curious may observe the several Constructions that the Comparatives will bear.

The Examples with the Article before *mas*, are called Relative Superlatives, and the following absolute or independent ; which end in *íssimo* *íssima* *érrimo-ma*, &c. as *prudentíssimo*, most discreet ;

discreet; *próximo*, nearest; *minimo*, the least, the smallest; *acérximo*, most vehement, most obstinate. When the Adverb *mui*, very, is before the Positive, then the Positive is made Superlative; as
 Doctissimo, } *Mui Docto*, very learned.
 Prudentissimo, } *Mui Prudente*, very prudent, &c.

C H A P. III.

Of PRONOUNS.

NO S, and *Vos*, though in reality they signify the same as *Nosotros*, and *Vosotros*, that is, We, and Ye; yet they differ in the use, and in that the two latter have the Feminine Gender, *Nosotras* and *Vosotras*, which the other have not, being always the same in all Genders. *Nosotros* is in all common use, as *We* with us; but *Nos*, is generally used by a single Person, as a Sovereign, or the like, where *We* is also employed in English. But sometimes *Nos* signifies *Us*, when it follows a Verb, as *dádnos de comér*, give us to eat; *guiádnos a la casa*, lead us to the House; and after *no*, as *no nos maltráteys*, do not abuse us.

Vos, is also apply'd to a single Person, that is in speaking to inferiors, or between familiar Friends, to avoid the word *tu*, thou; which is too gross in Spanish, as has been said before, and to save the respect of *V. M.* also above spoken of, thus they say, *vos os engañáis*, you are mistaken: and so before Verbs Plural, as *vos amáis*, you love; *vos perdeís*, you lose; but in the other Cases the *v* is cut off; as *yo os dáre*, I will give you; *el os llevará*,

llevará, he will carry you ; and the same when it follows the Verb ; as *quitáos de abí*, get you from thence ; and so in many other Cases.

Note, That *Los*, *Las*, are construed with the first and second Persons of the Plural ; as, *losque sómos Christianos*, *vivámos como tales*, We that are Christians, let us live as such. *Dicen los Apóstoles, que lasque sómos casadas obedecámos á los Maridos*, The Apostles say, that we married should obey the Husbands : *Losque fuéredes Christianos, observad y cumplid los Preceptos de Dios*, you that are Christian, keep and accomplish the Commandments of God, &c.

El, and *Ella* have a Dative Case of a different Termination, which is contrary to the general Spanish Rule ; for they sometimes make *le* and *les*, and these two are only used, when they imply something of Acquisition, and denote the Person receiving ; as, *Vi a Pédro y díle*, or *le di sus cartas*, I saw Peter and gave him his Letters. *Vide mis amigos, y comuniquéles mis cuidados*, I saw my Friends, and imparted my Affairs to them ; where it appears in both places, there is an imparting, or giving. In these Cases there is no using of *lo*, or *los* for *le*, or *les*, because it would breed Confusion, as will appear in this Instance, *Los que perdieron sus haciendas, piden a los jueces, que los abóren los ladrónes*, They that have been robb'd of their Goods, require of the Judges that they hang the Thieves. Now were it said, *Piden a los jueces que los abóren los ladrónes*, there would be no deciding whether they requir'd that the Thieves should be hang'd, or that the Thieves should hang them.

Mi, ti, si, are used after Prepositions ; as *a mi*, to me ; *pára ti*, for you ; *por si*, by himself ; but after *con*, with, they must all have the Syllable *go* added to them ; as *con migo*, with me ; *con tigo*, with you ; *con sígo*, with himself.

Me, *te*, *se*, are join'd to Verbs, and stand for the Dative, and Accusative Cases; as, *díxome*, he told me; *servíte*, to serve you; *amárse*, to love himself.

They may also be placed before the Verb, provided a Nominative Case is before them; as, *yo me iré*, I will be gone; *tu te irás*, you will be gone; *el se irá*; he will be gone; sometimes the Nominative Case is not expressed, but always understood, as *mé áma*, he loves me; where *el* is understood, as *el*, he; or *Juan*, John, or *Pédro*, Peter.

Observe here, that *me*, *te*, *se*, sometimes are us'd in the Dative by the Figure Pleonasim; as, *ó señor! y a donde os me llevan?* O Lord! where are they going to carry you from me? *Quien te se me cubrió de dolor?* Who is he that came here to cover or fill you up with Grief? instead of *quién te cubrió de dolor?*

Se before the third Person of a Verb, generally signifies what we express by *it is*, or *they*; as, *se dice*, it is said, or reported, or they say, or report; for if it be used to signify himself, as has been observed above, it is usual to add *a si*, or *a si mismo*, which denotes himself; as, *se áma a si mismo*, he loves himself.

La, *le*, *lo*, *las*, *les*, *los*, *me*, *te*, *se*, *nos*, and *vos*, are frequently joined to Verbs; as, *oíréla*, I will hear her; *diréle*, I will tell him; *barélo*, I will do it; *llevárélos*, I will carry them; *escriviréles*, I will write to them; *despedirélos*, I will dismiss them; *iréme*, I will be gone; *véte*, be you gone; *váyase*, let him be gone; *passeémonos*, let us walk; but in joining *vos* to the Verb, the *v* is always cut off; as, *amáros*, to love you, not *amárvos*; and if the Verb be the third Person Plural of the Imperative Mood, the last Letter of it which is always *d*, must be also cut off; as, *calentáos*, warm yourselves, and so in others.

When *le*, *lo*, *las*, *los*, are joined to the Infinitive Mood, the last *r* of it is sometimes changed into *l*, for the softer Sound, as for *dexirle*, say *dexille*; but this is no general Rule.

Note,

Note, That when a Relative is referred to a Noun Masculine, then we make use of *le*, when to a Feminine of *la*, when to a whole Sentence or Clause of *lo* in the Neuter.

Mío, túyo, súyo, nuéstro, vuéstro, and mísmo, have the Article added to them, when they are spoken absolutely, and without a Substantive ; as, *lo mío*, what is mine ; *lo túyo*, what is thine. Unless they are spoken in Answer to a Question ; as if it be asked, *Cúyo es éste cavállo?* whose Horse is this ? the Answer is, *mío, túyo, or súyo, mine, yours, or his.*

Cúyo is naturally an Interrogation ; as, *úyo es ésto ?* Whose is this ? But it is often us'd to signify the Person a Thing belongs to ; as *El hombre cuyo es éste cavállo*, the Man whose Horse this is, or to whom this Horse belongs.

Mi, tu, su, Plur. mis, tus, sus, are us'd for mío, túyo, súyo ; but always before a Substantive ; as, mi casa, my House ; tu libro, your Book ; su cara, his Face ; mis guantes, my Gloves ; tus espuelas, your Spurs ; sus papéles, his Papers.

'Este, ésse, aquél, are all Demonstratives ; but éste denotes a Thing near the Person speaking ; ésse, a Thing rather near him that is spoken to ; and aquél, that which is at a Distance from both ; as, éste cuchillo, this Knife ; ésse Pláto, that Dish ; aquél pérro, that Dog. The same is to be understood of the Feminine Gender of these Words, *'Esta, éssa, aquélla*, and of the Neuter, *'Esto, ésso, aquélllo* ; and so of the Plural Number of them, *'Estos, éssos, aquélllos, éstas, éssas, aquéllas.* *Aquél* pronounced with energy, stands for the first Person Singular, and *aquélllos* for the first Plural ; as, *yo aquél que en los pasados tiempos cante, &c.* I he who in former Times sung, &c.

The Relatives, or Interrogatives. *Quál*, sometimes is interrogatory, as *Quál dóllos ?* which of them ? and sometimes Comparative, as *Quál es el veráno, tal el inviérno*, Such as the Summer is, such

is the Winter ; and sometimes it is distributive, as
Quál coge el oro, quál la plata, One gathers the Gold,
another the Silver.

Que tal, differs herein from *Quál*, that the latter asks the particular Person, or Thing, and is *Which of them?* whereas the other questions the *Quality* of the Person, or Thing, as *Que tal es éste caballo?* What sort of Horse is that ?

Que is also an Interrogation, as *Que dizes?* What do you say ? It is also Demonstrative, as *El Hombre que habla*, The Man that speaks. It also signifies *than*; as, *Mas vale hablar poco, que hablar mal*, It is better to say little than to talk amiss. It is sometimes in the Nature of an Exclamation, as *Que Desgracia !* What a Misfortune ! *Que linda muger !* What a fine Woman ! *Que*, the same as *that*, as *que yo váya*, that I may go ; *Qué* for *porqué*, why, because ; as, *hazlo tu, qué yo no puédo*, do it thou, because I can't. Observe that *á que* is not one Spanish Word, because *á* is a Preposition, and denotes *to*, and then is not an Adverb, for *á que*, is the same as *to what End, to what Purpose* ; as *á que vinó éste hombre !* we understand, *á que fin*, to what end came this Man ? *á que juego perdió su dinero ?* At what, or at which Game did you lose your Money ? And always is a Relative, the same as *quál*, or *cuyo*, &c.

C H A P. IV.

Of V E R B S.

PProperly speaking, the Spanish Verbs have only these following simple Tenses, viz. the Present, the Preterimperfect, the Preterperfect, and the Future, of the Indicative Mood ; the Imperative Mood ; and the Present, Preterimperfect, and Future, of the Optative or Subjunctive ; as

Indicative,

Present.	'Amo,	I love.
Preterimperf.	Amába,	I did love.
Preterperfect.	Amé,	I have loved.
Future.	Amaré,	I shall, or will love.

Imperative,

'Ama,	Do you love.
-------	--------------

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.	Plégava Díos que yo áme,	God grant I love.
Preterim.	Amáral amásle, or amaria,	Would to God I did love.
Future.	Amáre,	When I shall love.

Infinitive,

Present.	Amár,	To love.
Gerund.	Amándo,	Loving.
Participle Passive.	Amádo,	Loved.

All the rest are formed by Circumlocution, putting several Words together to supply the Defect of such Tenses, as it has been said before.

And altho' there has been said enough of this Part of Speech in Part II. yet as the Verbs are the principal and most essential Part of a Grammar; I think it proper to observe here what none of the Grammarians has taken notice of before, in order to remove the several Difficulties that start to Beginners.

1. Verbs Substantives, and certain Passive Verbs, as *ser*, *ser llamado*, *ser Nombrado*, with other like will have such Case after them, as they have before them, that is the Nominative Case; as, *Pédro es hombre*, Peter is a Man; *yo me llamo Juan*, I am call'd John, &c. all Verbs of Gesture, that is those that betoken bodily moving, going, resting, or doing; as also all the Verbs that have the Word that goeth before, and the Word that comes after, both belonging to one Thing, require the Nominative after them; as, *Pédro va cajo*, Peter goeth lame; *el Rey duerme seguro*, the King sleepeth void of Care, &c. Also the Verb of the Infinitive Mood has

has the same Cases, when Verbs of wishing and the like come near them ; as, *Pédro deseá ser santo*, Peter wisheth to be Holy : *Yo antes quisiera ser Rico, que parecerlo*, I had rather be rich, than to be accounted so, &c.

2. Of the Auxiliary Verbs. *Havé* governs the Accusative ; as, *Pédro bá el libro*, Peter hath the Book. *Estar*, when it signifies to be in a Place, requires the Ablative with *en* ; but when to be with Somebody, an Ablative with *con* ; as, *estaré v. md en su casa!* will you be at home ? *Yo estaré en la Lónja*, I shall be on the Change ; *estás con v. md*, I am with you ; here *con* is used for shortness, because the meaning is, *Yo estás en compañía de v. md*, I am in your Company. Observe this Phrase, *estar en ésto, en ello*, &c. *está v. md. en ésto?* do you remember of that ? have you observed, or taken notice of that ? are you in the same Mind, &c. *Ser* when it signifies Possession, or pertaining to a Thing, will have the Genitive ; (except when the Pronouns *mío, tuyo, suyo, nuestro, vuestro* are to be us'd, because then they are in the Nominative ; as, *este libro es mío, &c.*) as, *éste Périne es de mi Mugér*, this Comb belongs to my Wife. But when it denotes the Property of a Thing, it has a Dative after it ; as, *ésto es para mi*, this is for me : *es a Pedro*, it belongs to Peter, &c. Note, That *mí, tí, sí*, seldom can be put in the Genitive by themselves, or without a Substantive ; tho' they may in the Dative ; as, *es de mi Hermáno*, it belongs to my Brother ; you may say, *es pára mi, para tí, para si*, is for me, for you, for him : except *de tí à Muger digo ésto*, of you O my Wife I say this ; *como báblas tan mal de mí?* why do you speak so bad of me, &c.

Of the Genitive.

Verbs signifying Grief, Compassion, Remembrance, Want, Forgetting, &c. will have a Genitive ; as, *Pesame de la Muerte de su Padre*, I am sorry

sorry for the Death of your Father : *Me compadéscó de sus hijas*, I pity his Daughters ; *Caresco, necesito de dineros*, I want Money. And thus *de* is put before the Thing spoke in the Speech, *es menester acuerdo de lo que me díxo*, it is necessary to remember of what you laid to me : *Me olvidé de esto*, I forgot that.

The Reciprocals of geering, boasting, and distrusting, govern the Genitive, as *vanagloriarse*, *pi-carse*, *desconfidarse*, &c.

Of the Dative.

Active Verbs have either Dative or Accusative; as, *conóscо esta Létra*, I know this Writing ; *conosco à Don António su Amigo*, I know Don Anthony your Friend.

The Prepositions of the Dative are *à* or *pára*.

To this Rule of the Dative belong the Verbs, *Jugár*, to play ; as, *Juégo à los náipes*, I play at Cards.

Obedecér, *desobedecér*, &c. *Obedesco al Rey*, I obey the King.

Mandár, when it signifies to command an Army, &c. requires the Accusative ; when other Things, the Dative ; as, *el Dúque de Montemár Mandó el Exército Espanól en Itália*, the Duke of Montemar commanded the Spanish Army in Italy ; *el Rey mandó al Embaxadór de Venécia de salir de Londres en tres días*, the King ordered the Venetian Ambassador to go out of London in three Days.

Ir, to go ; as, *vóy à Roma*, I go to Rome.

Assistir, to help or assist ; as, *assistiré à Pédro*, I will help or assist Peter.

Saludár, to salute ; as, *saludó à Fuláno*, he saluted such a one. *Hablár*, to speak ; *llamár*, to call ; *satisfacér*, to satisfy ; *servír*, to serve, *favorecer*, to favour ; *desafiár*, to chalenge ; *absolvér*, to absolve ; *aconsejár*, to give Advice ; *Amenazár*, to threaten : The Verbs of pleasing, displeasing, granting, denying,

ing, pardoning, and so all manner of Verbs put acquisitively, that is, with these Tokens *to*, or *for*, after them, will have a Dative Case of the Person, and often the Accusative of the Thing.

The Impersonals *acontecer*, *avenir*, *convenir*, *importar*, *pertenecer*, *placer*, and the like to these, will have often two Datives of Person, as, *à mí me aconteció*, it happened to me; *à tí te conviene*, it is convenient for you; *no le importa* *el*, it does not concern him, &c.

The Accusative.

The Latin Verbs, which govern the Accusative of the Thing, and the Dative of the Person, govern generally the same in Spanish; as, *restituir al César lo que pertenece al César*, render ye to Cesar what is belonging to Cesar; *dí el libro al Im-pressor*, I gave the Book to the Printer, &c.

Verbs of asking, teaching, arraying; also most of the Verbs Transitives, viz. all such as have after them an Accusative Case of the Doer, or Sufferer, whether they be Active, or Commune, and sometimes the Verbs Neuters, will have an Accusative of the Thing; as, *Gózo salud*, I enjoy Health; *pidí esta Gracia, ruego este favór*, I ask this Favour; *jocar el Organo*, to play on the Organ.

Generally all the Active Verbs require an Accusative or Dative; as, *amár à Díos*, *bacér bien*, to do good; *Guardar los Mandamientos de Díos*, to keep God's Commandments; *descubrir la verdád*, to discover the Truth; *ganár el pléito*, to get the Suit of Law.

Ser, to be; sometimes governs an Accusative, in the Infinitive; as, *es bueno ser hombre honrado*, it is good to be an honest Man.

Of the Ablative.

All Passive Verbs, and generally most of the Reciprocals, will have the Ablative with *de*; as, *sóñ amado de mi Padre*, I am loved of my Father; *me levanto de la Cama*, I get up from the Bed; except *acostárse*, *recoztárse*, *sentarse*, which have the Ablative with *en*.

The Price of a Thing is put after Verbs in the Accusative with *por*; as, *lo compré por un peso*, I bought it for a piece of Eight; *lo vendí por tres reales*, or *a tres reales la yarda*, I sell it at three Reals per Yard.

Verbs of Plenty, Filling, Emptying, Loading, or Unloading, will have an Ablative; as, *abundo de riquezas*, I abound of Riches; *te llenaré de oprobrios*, I will load you with Injuries, &c.

Verbs that betoken Receiving, or Distance, or taking away, will have an Ablative; as, *recibí mil pesos de Pédro*, I received one thousand Pieces of Eight of Péter: *Kensington dista tres millas de Londres*, Kensington is three Miles from London.

Verbs of arguing, quarrelling, fighting, &c. require the Ablative with *con*; as, *arguir*, *rehir*, *pelear*. The Verbs that govern in Latin these Prepositions *a*, *ex*, *ab*, will have in Spanish an Ablative with *de*, if *cum*, *con*; *pro*, *por*; *post*, *despues*; *usque*, *basta*, &c.

Observe at the last, that the following Rules are retained by the Spanish Authors, for the Verbs, viz.

1. If the Word governed by the Verb signifies a thing animate, generally it is put in the Dative Case; as, *vóí à ver à mi Padre*, I go to see my Father, *ámp à mi Mádre*, I love my Mother.

The Verbs of Motion to a Place, always govern the Dative; as, *vóí à Madrid*, I go to Madrid: the Verbs of Motion, from a Place, govern the Ablative with *de*; as, *vengo de España*, I come from Spain; if the Action, Motion, or Passion is through

a Thing

a Thing or Place, then the Verbs govern the Accusative with *por*; as, *vendré por Paris*, I shall come by way of Paris; *sufri por v. m^d*, I suffered for you, &c.

3. To express a Thing indifferently, the Spaniards always use the Accusative Case; as *tráigo pan y vino*; as in Latin, *affero panem & vinum*.

4. The Verbs *ver*, to see; *mirar*, to look; differ; because *ver* requires Accusative as, *ver el Palacio*, to see the Palace; and *mirar* Dative and Accusative, as *Miro el juégo*; *míro a lo que juégan*, but when they signify to look for one, then they govern the Accusative with *por*; as *Estúi mirando por v. m^d*, I am looking for you.

Of the Particles requisite to some Tenses.

5. The Present Tense of the Subjunctive, &c. and the first and second Preterimperfects of the said Mood, are construed with *que*, *para que*, *por que*, *aunque*, *bien que*, *oxala*, *supuesto que*, *puesto que*, *da doque*, *a fin que*, *con que*, *pues que*, &c. as,

Es bueno que yo vaya, it is good, that I go.

Para que el venga, To the end that he may come.

Porque tu aprendieras a orar, for that you might learn how to pray.

Aunque el venga, &c. altho he come, &c.

Afin que Aprendiera, or *aprendiese*, to the end that he might learn, &c.

The impersonal Verbs generally govern the Subjunctive with *que*, but with this Distinction; that when the impersonal is in the Present Tense, or Future of the Indicative Mood, then they always govern the present of the Subjunctive Mood; but when the Impersonal (or any other Verb taken impersonally) is in any of the Preterits of the Indicative, then it governs the Imperfect, the Perfect, the Plusperfect,

perfect, or the Future of the Subjunctive, according to the meaning of the Speech; as,

Conviene or *Convendrá*, que el Rey en Persona Comande el Exército, it is convenient, or it will be convenient, that the King in Person do command the Army.

Convino que el Príncipe fuésse con el, it was convenient that the Prince should go with him.

The Present Subjunctive is likewise construed with the Particles *por sutil*, *por Doctó*, *por sábio*, *por pequeño* or *Grande*, &c. but *por* stands there for *aunque*, although; as,

Qualquiera cosa cosa por pequeña que sea hágase su papel en el mundo, any thing, although it be little or small, does some service in the World, that is, serves for some Thing or Purpose in the World.

An Imperative often requires the Present, the first and second Preterimperfect, and the Future of the Subjunctive Mood, as, *sea loque sea*, let it be as it will, altho' it be so: *sea loque fuéra* or *fuésse*, let the Thing be, or happen as it would; *sea loque fuére*, happen what it shall happen, at all Events.

All the Tenses of the Subjunctive may be construed with *luégoque*, *quando*, *si*, *como*, *aunque*; but *plégá à Dios*, and *sea Dios servido*, require only the Present Subjunctive; and *plugiéra* or *pluguiésse*, *fuéra* or *fuésse* *Dios servido* may be construed with all the Tenses of the Subjunctive, except the Present Tense.

The third Imperfect of the Subjunctive Mood requires *si*, *quando*, *aunque*, *ò y como*, *de gusto*, *con gusto*, *de mui buena ò mala gana*, *ò quan de gana*, *por ventura*, *acaso*, &c.

Pues, *puesque*, *aunque*, *oomo*, *quando*, *luégo*, may be construed with all the Tenses of the Indicative Mood; as, *quando víne del campo*, *caí del caballo*, *pues perdí el estríbo*, when I came from the Country I fell from the Horse, because I lost the Stirrup, &c.

The third Imperfect of the Subjunctive Mood is sometimes construed by Circumlocution, viz. with the Infinitive and the Words, *bía*, *bías*, *bía*, &c. as *bablarte bía* (for *hablaría*), *escribirle bía por el correo* (for *escribiriale*), *abrazárla bía* (for *abrazaríala*) ; and the Reader will find, that if the Pronoun and the Letter *b* are taken away, it remains that Tense; as, if from *bablarte bía*, *e* and *b* is taken, there it will remain *bablaría*. And although some Authors are of Opinion that *bablarte bía*, stands for *bablarte íba*, I was going to speak to you; yet Father Valéra observes that that manner of speaking is a Circumlocution proper to the third Preteri imperfect, and often used in the Spanish Poetry, adding *b* to *í* by the Figure Epenthesis, to denote that the Accent should lie on the *í*, as *hacerte bía bien*, *si fueras bueno*, (*hacerte biá* for *haría*) he would do good for you, if you was good.

The second Future of the Indicative Mood, which is made by the Auxiliary Verb *havér*, is construed with Elegancy with the Particles *me*, *te*, *se*, *le*, *la*, *lo*, *les*, *las*, *los*, at the End of the Infinitive; as, *Guárme has* for *me guiarás*, or rather for *has de guiárme*, you must guide me; *darte hé mi hija en casamiento* for *be de darte*, or *te daré mi hija en casamiento*, I will or must give you my Daughter in Marriage; *darte la he*, for *be de dártela*, or *te la daré*, I will give her to you.

7. The English Tongue has one Sign to the Infinitive, viz. *to*; and in Spanish there is none for the Infinitive, as Infinitive, as *Amár*, to love; *Leér*, to read; *oír*, to hear: Altho' there are several Particles used in Spanish before the Infinitive, they are governed by other preceeding Verbs or Nouns Substantives, and these are *a*, *pára*, *de*, *con*, *en*, *por*, *basta*, *despuesde*, and *el* when the Infinitive serves as a Nominative to another Verb.

CHAP. V.

Of Prepositions.

THE Cases to be given to some Parts of Speech, being one principal Part of Syntax, and there being properly no Cases in Spanish, as there are in Latin, we will therefore treat of the Prepositions, which answer the End of the Latin Cases.

When the Noun in Speech denotes the Person possessing, or signifies whose a Thing is, we always make use of the Preposition *de*; as, *'Esto libro es de Juan*, This is John's Book; unless we use the positive Degree of that same Person, making it an Adjective to the Thing possessed; as, *'Esta ley es de Diós* or *divina*, This is God's Law, or divine Law.

This Use of the Positive is so necessary, when the Possession belongs to any of the Pronouns *yo*, *tu*, *se*, that we must always say, *'Esta Cása es mía*, *tuya*, *suya*, This House is mine, yours, his; not *de mi*, *ti*, or *si*. But they may be used when they do not denote Possession; as, *acuérdate de mi*, remember me; *duélete de ti*, have Compassion on your self; *dió buena cuénta de si*, he gave a good Account of himself.

The Preposition *de* is also applied to the Place from whence we come; as, *Vengo de Palacio*, I come from Court.

When the Preposition denotes Acquisition, or the Person for whom a Thing is, we use the Prepositions *a*, or *pára*; as, *dále a Juán ésta carta*, give John this Letter; *'Esta carta es pára Juán*, this Letter is for John. Except here the Terminations, *me*, *te*, *se*, of the Pronouns *yo*, *tu*, *el*, which though they denote

denote Acquisition, do not admit of these Prepositions ; as, *dióme el dinero*, he gave me the Money.

They are also applied to the Place we are going to, whether proper or appellative ; as, *Voy a Madrid, de dónde partire pára Róma*, I am going to Madrid, from whence I will set out for Rome.

A. is also applied to the Noun Passive ; as, *Pédro áma a Juán*, Peter loves John ; but when the Noun is an Appellative, it is sometimes used, and sometimes omitted ; as, *El maestro enséña los Discípulos*, or *a los Discípulos*, the Master teaches the Scholars.

The Preposition *Con*, before *mi, ti, si*, requires, that the Syllable *go* should be added to them ; as, *ven conmigo*, come with me ; *iré contigo*, I will go with you, *Pédro es áspero consigo*, Peter is harsh to himself. When *Con* is before an Infinitive, then the Verb is turned into a Gerund in English ; as, *con amár*, with loving.

Prepositions in Composition are frequent in Spanish, that is, joined to other Words and made one with them. These are commonly *à*, and *en, em, &c.* as, *Dinero*, is Money, thence *hombre adinerado*, a money'd Man ; and we see the like in the English, where adding *ed* to Money makes the same as the Spanish *a* : But this does not hold in most other Words : from *Noche*, Night, *anochecer*, to grow Night, which the English does not express without such Circumlocutions. *Vide*, the second Part, and the Remarks.



C H A P. VI.

Of Adverbs, Conjunctions, and Interjections.

VER Y little need be said of these three Parts of Speech more than has been observed before.

As for those Adverbs, that are formed by adding *ménte* to Adjectives, as is done in English, by the Addition of the Syllable *ly*; when two of this Sort follow one another, the two additional Syllables, *ménte*, of the first of them, are always cut off; thus, *Caminar segura, y alegremente*, To travel safely, and merrily.

A Negative Adverb joined to any other Negative Part of Speech, does not make an Affirmative, as in Latin, and other Languages; for, *No veo a nadie*, is, I see No-body; *No te bálla ninguno*, No-body can find you; nor can the same Words be taken negatively without both the Negatives; for, it can not properly be said in Spanish, *Veo a nadie*, for, I see No-body; but if we would avoid the two Negatives, we must say, *No veo a persona alguna*, I see not any Person; *Nadie te balla*, No-body can find you.

Thus, *No quiero nada*, is, I will have Nothing; but, *un no nada*, is next to Nothing; as, *Faltale un no nada del peso*, It wants as much as Nothing of the Weight. Notwithstanding which, the learned in Spain are of a contrary Opinion; and do rightly say, that in the Spanish, as well as in Latin, two Negative Parts of Speech make an Affirmative; as, *No nada, algo*, something, &c.

No, is also sometimes used by way of Interrogation; as, *No vendréis por acá?* Will not you come this Way?

The Conjunction *Tambien*, also, and *Tampoco*, neither, are used thus; *El va, y yo iré también*, He goes, and I will go also; *El no quiere, ni yo tampoco*, He will not, nor I neither.

Of Interjections, there is no more to add to what has been said already.

Of Figurative Construction.

HERE are two Sorts of Construction; the Proper, or Simple; and the Improper, or Figurative. The first of them is that which in all Points is agreeable to the Rules of Grammar, which has been sufficiently spoken of before. The Figurative is a Way of speaking that departs in some respect from the established Rules, and yet is admitted and received, because in common Use, not only among the Illiterate, but also among the Learned.

What little there is of this Sort in the *Spanish* Tongue most necessary to be known, shall be comprehended in a few Lines.

The Paragoge, a Figure which adds some Letter, or Syllable at the End of a Word, is now quite out of Use in *Spanish*, but may be found in some old Poems, especially common Songs and Ballads, where they sometimes, to make up a Verse, say, *Amóre* for *Amor*, Love; *Cantáre*, for *Cantar*, a Song, or to sing: But these superfluous Additions are now, as has been said, quite laid aside, and only found in the Verb, *Sói*, and *Vói*, from the Verbs *Ser*, to be, and *Ir*, to go; and therefore according to the general Rule of *Spanish* Verbs, ought to be *So*, and *Vo*, as they were used in former Ages, but of latter Times the *i* has been added for the better Sound.

The Syncope is the cutting off some Letter, in the Middle of a Word ; as, *yo vía*, I saw, *tu vías*, you saw ; for *veía*, *veías*. The same is frequently used in the second Person Plural of the Preter-imperfect Tense of the Optative, and Subjunctive Moods, of Verbs ; as *Anduviéssais*, for *Anduviéssedeis* ; *Andaríais*, for *Andaríadeis* ; *Anduviérais*, for *Anduviéradeis*, &c.

The Apocope, is cutting off a Letter at the End of a Word ; as, *Mas val prevenir*, que ser *prevenido*, It is better to prevent, than to be prevented ; where we have *mas val*, for *mas vale*. The same may be seen in other Words, but now little used.

Metathesis, is Inverting the natural Order of the Letters in a Word ; as, some are apt to say, *bacéldo*, do it ; *decíldo*, say it ; *quitáldo*, take it away ; instead of *bacéldo*, *decídlo*, *quitádlo*, which are the properest and most polite Way of speaking, and therefore the other Way not to be imitated.

There is another Figurative Construction, called Eclipsis, when several Words are left out of a Sentence, and to be understood ; as, *Buénos días*, Good-morrow, where is to be understood, *os dé Díos*, God give you ; *buén Viage*, a good Voyage ; *sub-intelligitur*, *os dé Diós*, God give you ; and so in many other Cases, which are common in all Languages, and therefore do not need to have much said of them.

The same may be said of many other Figures, which if all were to be mentioned, would rather tire, than inform the Reader ; and it would be likewise superfluous to mention here, and to burden the Memory with the Rules of the Prosody, which are the same as those of the Latin, and no ways necessary to learn the Spanish Language, besides what has been said in the Orthography.



Some General Observations for forming the Spanish from the Latin.

Latin Substantives which have their Ablative in ate become Spanish by changing ate into ád, laying the Accent as in the Latin, as,

<i>Latin</i>	Charitate	<i>Spanish</i>	Caridád
	Fidelitate		Fidelidád
	Obscuritate		Obsuridád
	Voluntate		Voluntád
	Infinitate		Infinitidád
	Magnanimitate		Magnanimidád

Many Latin Words beginning with pl change it into ll in Spanish ; as,

<i>Latin</i>	Plenus	<i>Spanish</i>	Lléno
	Pluvia		Lluvia
	Plaga		Llága
	Plorare		Llorár
	Planctus		Llanto

But this is nothing of a general Rule, for very many *Latin Words* beginning with *pl* retain the same in *Spanish*; as, *Plánta*, a Plant; *Placér*, Delight; *Plébe*, the Multitude; *Plúma*, a Feather, &c.

Latin

Latin Words beginning with f, in Spanish often change it into H, thus

Latin	Facere Faba Falco Farina Formosus Ferrum Fervor Furnus	Spanish	Hacé Hába Halcón Harína Hermoso Hiérro Hervór Hórno
--	---	--	--

Latin Substantives ending in one in the Ablative, become Spanish by taking off the last Vowel, as

Latin	Educatione Religione Congregatione Generacione	Spanish	Educación Religión Congregación Generación
--	---	--	---

Where note, that they change e into e, as above.

Latin	Sermone Cicerone Platone	Spanish	Sermón Cicerón Platon
--	--------------------------------	--	-----------------------------

Latin Substantives ending in o in the Ablative, are true Spanish, as

Latin	Ornamento Experimento Exemplo Argumento Antidoto	Spanish	Ornaménto Experiménto Exémpto Arguménto Antídoto
--	--	--	--

Latin Adjectives ending in *is*, in Spanish cast away *is*, thus

<i>Latin</i>	Materialis	<i>Spanish</i>	Material
	Finalis		Finál
	Facilis		Fácil
	Debilis		Débil

Latin Adjectives ending in *us*, are made Spanish by their Ablative in *o*, as

<i>Latin</i>	Malus	<i>Spanish</i>	Málo
	Bonus		Buéno
	Siccus		Séco
	Humidus		Húmido

Latin Verbs become Spanish by only cutting off the last *e*, thus

<i>Latin</i>	Caſtigare	<i>Spanish</i>	Caſtigár
	Amare		Amár
	Tenere		Tenér
	Perdere		Perdér
	Sentire		Sentír

It would be endless to pretend to shew all the Affinity between the *Spanish* and the *Latin*, the main Body of the former being derived from the latter, with only such small Difference as may easily be conceived from what has been said above,





A

VOCABULARY,

CONTAINING

Such Words as most frequently occur in common Use, and are therefore most necessary to be first known by Learner's; as, The Parts of the Body, Household-Furniture; Names of Beasts, Birds, and Fishes; the Service at Table; Fruit, Trees, Cloathing, and many other Sorts, all under their respective Heads.



The Parts of Human Body.

Pártes del Cuerpo Humano.

- | | |
|--|---|
| L A cabéza, <i>the head.</i> | Las siénes, <i>the temples.</i> |
| El celébro, <i>the brain.</i> | La oreja, <i>the ear.</i> |
| El cogote, <i>the part
behind, where the
head and neck join.</i> | La ternilla de la oreja, <i>the
gristle of the ear.</i> |
| La coronilla, <i>the crown of
the head.</i> | El huéco de la oreja, <i>the
hollow of the ear.</i> |
| La molléra, <i>the mould of
the head.</i> | La tela del oído, <i>the drum
of the ear.</i> |
| La frénte, <i>the forehead.</i> | La céja, <i>the eyebrow.</i> |
| | El párpado, <i>the eyelid.</i> |

Las

The Parts of Human Body.

Partes del Cuerpo Humano.

Las pestañas, <i>the eye-lashes.</i>	La nuca, <i>the nape of the neck.</i>
El lagrimal, or la cuenca del ojo, <i>the corner of the eye.</i>	La garganta, <i>the throat.</i>
El blanco del ojo, <i>the white of the eye.</i>	El gazzate, <i>the gullet.</i>
La nina del ojo, <i>the eye-ball, or sight of the eye.</i>	El seno, <i>the bosom.</i>
Tela del ojo, <i>the film of the eye.</i>	La tetra, <i>a spot.</i>
Nervio optico, <i>the optic nerve.</i>	El pezon de la tetra, <i>the nipple of the breast.</i>
La nariz, <i>the nose.</i>	El pecho, <i>the breast.</i>
Las ventanas de la nariz, <i>the nostrils.</i>	El estomago, <i>the stomach.</i>
La ternilla de la nariz, <i>the gristle of the nose.</i>	Las costillas, <i>the ribs.</i>
La punta de la nariz, <i>the tip of the nose.</i>	La barriga, <i>the belly.</i>
La mexilla, or el carrillo, <i>the cheek.</i>	El ombligo, <i>the navel.</i>
La boca, <i>the mouth.</i>	La ingle, <i>the groin.</i>
La enzia, <i>the gum.</i>	El brazo, <i>the arm.</i>
Los dientes, <i>the fore teeth.</i>	El codo, <i>the elbow.</i>
Las muellas, <i>the grinders.</i>	El sobaco, <i>the armpit.</i>
Los colmillos, <i>the eye teeth.</i>	La mano, <i>the hand.</i>
La lengua, <i>the tongue.</i>	La muñeca, <i>the wrist.</i>
El paladar, <i>the palate.</i>	La palma de la mano, <i>the palm of the hand.</i>
La quixada, <i>the jaw.</i>	Los dedos, <i>the fingers.</i>
La barba, <i>the chin, or the beard; but in the latter sense commonly used in the plural, Barbas.</i>	Las junturas, or juntas de los dedos, <i>the joints of the fingers.</i>
El cuello, <i>the neck.</i>	La yema del dedo, <i>the brawn of the finger.</i>
La cerviz, <i>the binder part of the neck.</i>	El pulgar, <i>the thumb.</i>
	El dedo indice, <i>the forefinger.</i>
	El dedo del corazon, <i>the middle finger.</i>
	El dedo annular, <i>the fourth finger.</i>
	El dedo menique, or auricular, <i>the little finger.</i>
	La

The Parts of Human Body.

Pártes del Cuerpo Humano.

La uña, <i>the nail.</i>	El pié, <i>the foot.</i>
Las espaldas, <i>the back.</i>	La plánta del pié, <i>the sole of the foot.</i>
Los hombros, <i>the shoulders.</i>	La garganta del pié, <i>the joint of the foot.</i>
Los lemos, <i>the loins.</i>	El empéine, <i>the instep.</i>
Los lados, <i>the sides.</i>	El calcañal, <i>the heel.</i>
Las nálgas, <i>the buttocks.</i>	El dédo del pié, <i>a toe.</i>
Las pártes vergonzosas, <i>the privities.</i>	El dédo gordo, <i>the great toe.</i>
El muslo, <i>the thigh.</i>	La piél, or el pellejo, <i>the skin.</i>
La rodilla, <i>the knee.</i>	El cabelllo, <i>the hair.</i>
El jarrete, <i>the ham.</i>	Un pelo, <i>a single hair.</i>
La pierna, <i>the leg.</i>	La cara, <i>the face.</i>
La pantorrilla, <i>the calf of the leg.</i>	El visage, <i>the visage.</i>
La espinilla, <i>the spine-bone.</i>	
El tobillo, <i>the ankle.</i>	

The interior Parts of Human Body.

Pártes interiores del Cuerpo Humano.

M	Orecillo, <i>a muscle.</i>	La espaldilla, <i>the shoulder-bone.</i>
	Gráffa, or gordura, <i>fat.</i>	La canilla del brazo, <i>the arm bone.</i>
	Membrána, <i>a membrane.</i>	Huéfso sacro, } <i>the rump or Rabadilla, } bone.</i>
	Nérvio, or niérvo, <i>a nerve.</i>	Esqueleto, <i>a skeleton.</i>
	Véna, <i>a vein.</i>	El corazón, <i>the heart.</i>
	Artéria, <i>an artery.</i>	Los hófes, or } <i>the lungs</i>
	Ternilla, <i>a gristle.</i>	Los pulmónes, or } <i>or the</i>
	Huéfso, <i>a bone.</i>	Los livianos, <i>lights.</i>
	Meóllo, or } <i>marrow.</i>	El hígado, <i>the liver.</i>
	Tuétano, <i></i>	El bázo, <i>the spleen.</i>
	La calavéra, <i>the skull.</i>	Los riñones, <i>the kidneys.</i>
	Choquezuélas, <i>the chine bones.</i>	Los fósos, <i>the brains.</i>
	El espinázo, <i>the back bone.</i>	El célebro, <i>the brains.</i>
	Las costillas, <i>the ribs.</i>	

The interior Parts of Human Body.

Pártes interiores del Cuérpo Humáno.

El estómago, <i>the stomach.</i>	La fléma, <i>flegm.</i>
La boca del estómago, <i>the pit of the stomach.</i>	El quíle, <i>the chile.</i>
Las tripas, <i>the guts.</i>	La leche, <i>the milk.</i>
Los intestinos, <i>the bowels.</i>	Estiércol, <i>dung.</i>
La madre, or } <i>the matrix,</i>	Sudor, <i>sweat.</i>
La matríz, } <i>or womb.</i>	Móco, <i>snot.</i>
La vexiga, <i>the bladder.</i>	Cáspa, <i>scurf.</i>
La sangre, <i>the blood.</i>	Saliva, <i>spittle.</i>
La cólera, <i>the choler.</i>	Lágrima, <i>a tear.</i>

The five Senses,
Los cinco Sentidos.

La vista, <i>the sight.</i>	El gusto, <i>the taste.</i>
El oído, <i>the hearing.</i>	El tacto, <i>the feeling.</i>
El olfato, <i>the smell.</i>	

Good Qualities in Human Bodies,
Buénas Calidádes del Cuérpo Humáno.

Salud, <i>health.</i>	Brío, <i>spiritliness.</i>
Hermosura, <i>beauty.</i>	Buén talle, <i>a good shape.</i>

Defects in Human Bodies,
Deféctos del Cuérpo Humáno.

Fealdad, <i>deformity.</i>	Flaqueza, <i>weakness.</i>
Arrugas, <i>wrinkles.</i>	Ser tuerto, <i>to have but one eye.</i>
Pécas, <i>freckles.</i>	Coxez, <i>lameness.</i>
Lagañas, <i>blear-eyes.</i>	Ser tartamudo, <i>to stammer.</i>
Verruga, <i>a wart.</i>	Corcova, <i>crookedness.</i>
Lunár, <i>a mole.</i>	Ser calvo, <i>to be bald-headed.</i>
Núbe en el ójo, <i>a pearl in the eye.</i>	Ser rómo, <i>to have a flat nose.</i>
Catarata, <i>a cataract.</i>	Estar estropiado, <i>to be crippled.</i>
Ceguedad, <i>or ceguera, blindness.</i>	Tullido, <i>lame of the limbs.</i>
Magrura, <i>leanness.</i>	Eunúcho, <i>an eunuch.</i>
	Zúrdo,

Defects in Human Bodies,
Deféctos del Cuérpo Humáno.

Zúrdo, <i>left-handed.</i>	Mánco, <i>lame of a hand.</i>
Víscō, or víscōjo, <i>squint-eyed.</i>	Múdo, <i>dumb.</i>

Of all that appertains to Cloathing.
De lo que tóca al vestir.

Páño, <i>cloth.</i>	Fiéltro, <i>felt.</i>
Páño fino, <i>fine cloth.</i>	Angéo, <i>canvas.</i>
Páño básto, <i>coarse cloth.</i>	Bayéta, <i>bays.</i>
Páño tundido, <i>mill'd cloth.</i>	Lána, <i>wooll.</i>
Grána, or } Scarlet.	Estdámbre, <i>worsted.</i>
Escarlata, } Scarlet.	Séda, <i>silk.</i>
Ráxa, <i>cloth rash.</i>	Bocací, <i>buckram.</i>
Sayál, <i>sackcloth.</i>	Jóya, <i>a jewel.</i>
Frísia, <i>frize.</i>	Hevilla, <i>a buckle.</i>
Estagnéña, <i>serge.</i>	Alamáres, <i>loops on coats.</i>
Estófa, <i>stuff.</i>	Ojal, <i>a button-hole.</i>
Tafetán, <i>taffety.</i>	Bordadúra, <i>embroidery.</i>
Rásó, <i>satin.</i>	Botón, <i>a button.</i>
Terciopélo, <i>velvet.</i>	Fránja, or } fringe.
Damáico, <i>damask.</i>	Fluéque, } fringe.
Brocádo, <i>brocade.</i>	Púntas, or encáxe, <i>lace.</i>
Gorgorán, <i>grogramm.</i>	Cínta, <i>a ribbon.</i>
Chamelóte, <i>taby.</i>	Listón, <i>a broad ribbon.</i>
Téla de óro, <i>cloth of gold.</i>	Passamáno, <i>gold or silver lace.</i>
Algodón, <i>cotton.</i>	Ribete, <i>an edging.</i>
Fustán, <i>fustian.</i>	Sombréro, <i>a hat.</i>
Líno, <i>flax.</i>	Cópa del sombréro, <i>the crown of the hat.</i>
Cambráy, <i>cambrick.</i>	Fálda del sombréro, <i>the brim of the hat.</i>
Holánda, <i>bolland.</i>	Trencillo, <i>the hat-band.</i>
Ruán, <i>fine French linnen.</i>	Plumáge, <i>a feather.</i>
Téla de cáñamo, <i>hempen cloth.</i>	Bonetillo de viéjo, <i>a skull-cap.</i>
Terliz, <i>tsken.</i>	Bonéte,
Calicú, <i>calico.</i>	
Gáza, <i>muzlin.</i>	

Of all that appertains to Cloathing.

De lo que toca al vestir.

Bonéte, <i>a cap.</i>	Bótas, <i>boots.</i>
Bonéte pára dormír, <i>a night-cap.</i>	Poláinas, <i>spatterdashes.</i>
Bonéte de clérigo, <i>a clergy-man's square cap.</i>	Espuélas, <i>spurs.</i>
Górra, <i>an old fashion cap.</i>	Púños, or } <i>cuffs or ruffles.</i>
Caperúza, <i>another sort of cap.</i>	Buéltas, } <i>belts.</i>
Camisa, <i>a shirt.</i>	Tahalí, <i>a shoulder-belt.</i>
Almilla, <i>a waistcoat.</i>	Tíros, <i>a waste-belt.</i>
Chúpa, <i>a waistcoat.</i>	Espáda, <i>a sword.</i>
Calzoncillos, <i>drawers.</i>	Dága, <i>a dagger.</i>
Jubón, <i>a doublet.</i>	Cápa, <i>a cloak.</i>
Mángua, <i>a sleeve.</i>	Casaca, <i>a coat.</i>
Mángua perdida, <i>a loose hanging sleeve.</i>	Ungarína, <i>a coat.</i>
Faldillas de jubón, <i>the skirts of a doublet.</i>	Guánte, <i>a glove.</i>
Calzones, <i>breeches.</i>	Ceñidór, <i>a girdle.</i>
Balóna, <i>a band.</i>	Cabelléra, <i>a wig.</i>
Cuélllo, <i>a collar.</i>	Pañuelo, or } <i>a pocket</i>
Coléto, <i>a buff coat.</i>	Pañizuelo, or } <i>band-</i>
Agujéta, <i>a point.</i>	Liénzó de fal- } <i>ker-</i>
Faltriquéra, <i>a pocket.</i>	triquéra, } <i>chief.</i>
Bolsillo, <i>a coat or waste-coat-pocket.</i>	Rópa, or } <i>a gown.</i>
Médias, <i>stockins.</i>	Ropón, } <i>a gown.</i>
Médias de séda, <i>silk-stockings.</i>	Rópa de levantár, <i>a morning gown.</i>
Médias de estámbre, <i>worsted stockings.</i>	Pelíco, or } <i>a shepherd's jerkin.</i>
Ligas, <i>garters.</i>	Zamárra, } <i>jerkin.</i>
Zapátos, <i>shoes.</i>	Pára Mugéres,
Escarpines, <i>socks.</i>	For Women.
Pantúflo, <i>a slipper.</i>	Tocádo, <i>a bead-dress.</i>
Borcegui, <i>a buskin.</i>	Tóca, <i>a quoif.</i>
	Mánto, <i>a veil.</i>
	Sáya, <i>a petticoat.</i>
	Vasquiña, <i>an upper petticoat.</i>
	Guardapies, <i>a petticoat.</i>
	Enáguas, <i>the petticoat next to them.</i>

Of all that appertains to Cloathing for Women.

De lo que tóca al vestir para Mugéres.

Avantál, or delantál, an Avánico, a fan.

apron.

Ballénas, Mays.

Kópa, a gown.

Mantilla, a mantle.

Capillo, a hood.

Chápin, properly a Spanish high clog, made of cork,

but applied to signify any other.

Liénzo del cuélllo, a neck-bandkerchief.

Zarcillos, ear-rings.

Arracádas, pendants.

Gargantilla, a necklace.

Collár, a collar.

Manillas, or } bracelets.

Braceletes, }

Jóyas, jewels.

Sortijas, rings.

Pedrerías, precious stones.

Anillo, a ring.

Guardafól, or } an umbrella.

Quitasól,

Relox, or }

Muéstra,

Tablillas, tables.

Espéjo, a looking-glass.

Buxéta, a little box.

Estufilla, a muff.

Calcetas, under stockings of bread or cotton.

Péinadór, a combing cloth.

Cosas de níños, things for children.

Pañáles, clouts.

Mantillas, mantles.

Fáxa, a rowler or swaith.

Juguétes, play-things.

Cúna, a cradle.

Ama, a nurse.

Díxes, toys.

Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.

De lo tocante al Comér y Bebér.

L A comida del medio Hastio, a loathing of meat for want of stomach.

día, dinner.

Céna, supper.

Almuérzo, breakfast.

Merienda, dinner, or after-noon's luncheon.

Asco, a loathing at the sight of nastiness.

Colación, collation.

Borrácho, a drunkard.

Banquéte, an entertainment.

Buen bebedor, a good drinker.

Combidádo, a guest.

Buen apetito, a good appetite.

Hambre, hunger.

Glotón, a glutton.

Sed, thirst.

Pan, bread.

Pan

Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.

De lo tocante al Comér y Beber.

Pan blánco, white bread.	Pepitória, giblets.
Pan candiál, the whitest bread.	Carbonáda, meat broil'd on the coals.
Pan bázο, brown bread.	Picadillo, a hash.
Pan moléte, French bread.	Cecina, hung meat.
Pan reciente, new bread.	Pernil, or <i>l</i> a gammon or
Pan de todo el trigo, beaten bread.	Jamón, ham.
an de centeo, rye bread.	Carnero, mutton.
Pan decevada, barley bread.	Vaca, beef.
Pan de avéna, oaten bread.	Cordero, lamb.
Pan de millo, millet bread.	Ternera, veal.
Pan de levadura, leavened bread.	Puerco, pork.
Biscocho, biscuit.	Cábrā, goat's flesh.
Rebanada de pan, a slice of bread.	Cabrítο, kid.
Cantéro de pan, a crust of bread.	Tocino, bacon.
La cortéza, the crust.	Pierna de carnero, a leg of mutton.
Máffa, dough.	Espalda de carnero, a shoulder of mutton.
Tórtα, a cake.	Lomo, a loin.
Rosquilla, a fine sort of cake, made like a roll.	Pέcho, a breast.
Buñuelo, a fritter.	Máños de carnero, sheep's trotters.
Tárta, a tart.	Rueda de ternera, a fillet of veal.
Quesadilla, a cheesecake.	Astadura, the pluck.
Empanada, a pye.	Salchicha, a saucidge.
Cárne, flesh.	Longaniza, a great saucidge.
Cárne cozida, boil'd meat.	Salchichón, the biggest saucidge.
Cárne asfada, roast meat.	Morcilla, a blood pudding.
Cárne estofada, stew'd meat.	Pastel, a pastry.
Cárne frita, fry'd meat.	Caldo, broth.
Cárne grilláda, broil'd meat.	Sópa, soup.
Cárne mórmia, flesh without bones.	Potage, pottage.

Pápas,

Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.

De lo tocante al Comér y Beber.

Pápas, or }	Huévos y torrésnos, col-
Púches, } pap.	lops and eggs.
Pistó, jelly broth.	Huévos rebuéltos, butter'd
Léche, milk.	eggs.
Nata, cream.	Huévos de saltriquéra,
Suero, whey.	yolks of eggs in a shell of
Requesón, curds.	sugar, to carry in the
Manteca, butter.	pocket.
Queso, cheese.	Huévos reales, sweet eggs
Cuajo, rennet.	or Cabellos spun out
Cuajada, milk hardened with rennet, before it breaks into curds and whey.	de ángeles, like hairs.
Huevo, an egg.	Sazón, seasoning.
Yema de huevo, the yolk of an egg.	Salmuera, brine.
Clara del huevo, the white of the egg.	Espécias, spice.
Huevo blando, a soft egg.	Pimienta, pepper.
Huevo duro, a hard egg.	Gengibre, ginger.
Huevo fresco, a new egg.	Clavo de especias, cloves.
Huevo en cascara, an egg in the shell.	Canela, cinnamon.
Huevo cozido, a boil'd egg.	Nuez moscada, or de
Huevo asado, an egg roast-	especia, nutmeg.
ed in the embers.	Flor de especia, mace.
Huevo estrellado, a fry'd egg.	Mostaza, mustard.
Huevo huero, an addle egg.	Agraz, verjuice.
Huevo empollado, an egg with a chicken in it.	Vinagre, vinegar.
Huevos de pescado, the spawn of fish.	Azeite, oyl.
Huevos mexidos, yolks of eggs stew'd with white wine and sugar.	Sal, salt.
	Azucar, sugar.
	Escabeches, pickles.
	Dulces, sweetmeats.
	Almivar, sugar boil'd up for conserves.
	Confites, comfits.
	Mermelada, marmelade.
	Perada, pears preserv'd like marmelade.

*Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.**/ De lo tocante al comér y Beber.*

Pastillas de bocá, <i>sweet lozenges.</i>	Víno añéjo, <i>old wine.</i>
Naranjada, <i>candy'd oranges.</i>	Víno ligéro, <i>light wine.</i>
Turrón, <i>a rich sweetmeat made of almonds, honey, &c.</i>	Vinázo, <i>a strong wine.</i>
Barquillos, or Suplicaciónes, <i>wafers.</i>	Malvasía, <i>malmsey.</i>
bida, drink.	'Agua pié, <i>liquor made of water put to the grapes after they have been press'd.</i>
Víno, <i>wine.</i>	Hez del víno, <i>wine lees.</i>
Víno puro, <i>pure wine.</i>	Hipocrás, <i>hypocras.</i>
Víno aguado, <i>wine and water.</i>	Aguardiente, <i>brandy.</i>
Víno vuélto, <i>prick'd wine.</i>	Cervéza, <i>ale or beer.</i>
Víno tinto, <i>red wine.</i>	Alója, <i>meath or metheglin.</i>
Víno blanco, <i>white wine.</i>	Cídra, <i>cyder.</i>
Víno halóque, <i>pale wine.</i>	Chocolate, <i>chocolate.</i>
Víno claréte, <i>claret wine.</i>	Teá, or Thé tea.
Víno dulce, <i>sweet wine.</i>	Limonáda, <i>limeade.</i>
Víno picante, <i>sharp wine.</i>	

Los Animales, 'Aves, Péces, Frutas, Híeras, Raíces, &c. comestibles, se hallarán debaxo de sus propios Títulos.

The Beasts, Fowls, Fishes, Fruits, Herbs, Roots, &c. that are eatable, will be found under those Heads.

Béstias.	Beasts.
Béstia, <i>a beast.</i>	Váca, <i>a cow.</i>
Béstia doméstica, or Mánfa, <i>a tame beast.</i>	Buéy, <i>an ox.</i>
Béstia feroz, <i>a fierce beast.</i>	Carnéro, <i>a sheep.</i>
Ganado, <i>cattle.</i>	Ovéja, <i>an ewe.</i>
Ganado mayor, <i>great cattle.</i>	Cordero, <i>a lamb.</i>
Tóro, <i>a bull.</i>	Bezérro, <i>a calf.</i>
	Javalí, <i>a wild boar.</i>

Puérco,

Puércos, <i>an hog.</i>	Alazán tostado, <i>a dark sorrel.</i>
Búfalo, <i>a buffalo.</i>	Hovéro, <i>that has a white spot on the off hind foot.</i>
Cabállo, <i>an horse.</i>	Rubicán, <i>flea-bitten.</i>
Cabállo castrado, <i>a gelding.</i>	Cabállo aguado, <i>py-bald.</i>
Garañón, <i>a stallion.</i>	Yéguia, <i>a mare.</i>
Cabállo entero, <i>a stone-horse.</i>	Cabrón, <i>a he-goat.</i>
Cabállo corredór, <i>a race-horse.</i>	Cábra, <i>a she-goat.</i>
Cabállo de alquilér, <i>a horse to be let.</i>	Cabrítos, <i>a kid.</i>
Cabállo de mano, <i>a led horse.</i>	Pérro, <i>a dog.</i>
Cabállo de pósta, <i>a post-horse.</i>	Pérro de caza, <i>a hound.</i>
Cabállo rebélde, <i>a restive horse.</i>	Sabuésto, <i>a blood-bound.</i>
Cabállo desbocado, <i>a hard-mouth'd horse.</i>	Podenco, or } <i>a setting-dog.</i>
Cabállo medréso, <i>a start-ing horse.</i>	Perdiguero } <i>a setting-dog.</i>
Cabállo trapezadór, <i>a fumbling horse.</i>	Pérro callado, <i>a bound that does not open well.</i>
Cabállo que sacude, <i>a jolting horse.</i>	Párro báxo, <i>a terrier.</i>
Cabállo asmático, <i>a broken-winded horse.</i>	Lebrél, <i>a grey-bound.</i>
Cabállo indómito, <i>a horse that has not been broke, or will not be broke.</i>	Pérro ventor, <i>a finder.</i>
Cabállo báyo, <i>a bay horse.</i>	Pérro del agua, <i>a water-dog.</i>
Báyo castaño, <i>an chestnut bay.</i>	Mastín, <i>a mastif.</i>
Báyo escuro, <i>a brown bay.</i>	Pérro de pastór, <i>a shepherd's dog.</i>
Báyo dorado, <i>a bright bay.</i>	Pérro veladór, <i>a house dog.</i>
Picazo, <i>a py'd horse.</i>	Perrillo de falda, <i>a lap-dog.</i>
Rúziorodado, <i>dapple grey.</i>	Aláno, <i>a bull-dog.</i>
De color de gamúza, or gamuéza, <i>a cream colour.</i>	Gálgo, <i>a bare bound.</i>
Alazán, <i>a sorrel.</i>	Lechón, <i>a sucking-pig.</i>
	Cochíno, <i>a young hog.</i>
	Conéjo, <i>a rabbit.</i>
	Hacanéa, <i>a pad.</i>
	Muléto, <i>a young mule.</i>
	Múlo, <i>an he mule.</i>
	Múla, <i>a she mule.</i>
	Pótro, <i>a colt.</i>
	Pollino, <i>an ass's colt.</i>
	Ciérvos, <i>a stag.</i>
	Ciérvos, <i>a stag.</i>

Ciérvia, a bind.	Ratón, a mouse.
Cachórro de ciérvo, a fawn.	Râta, a rat.
'Asas de ciérvo, a stag's horns.	Zórra, or } Raposa, a fox.
Rástro, o pisadas de ciérvo, the track of a stag.	Tópo, a mole.
Comadréja, a weasel.	Hiéna, an hyena.
Texón, a badger.	Leopárdo, a leopard.
Gamúza, a wild goat.	León, a lion.
Cábra montés, a roe-buck.	Leóna, a lioness.
Ató de algália, a civet-cat.	Leoncillo, a lion's whelp.
Gámo, a fallow-deer.	Lóbo, a wolf.
Dáma, a doe.	Lóbo cerval, an ounce.
Hardilla, a squirrel.	'Osso, a bear.
Elephánte, an elephant.	Ossíllo, a bear's cub.
Foína, or } Márta, a martin.	Pantéra, a panther.
Móno, a monkey.	Abáda, or } Rhinocerónte, a rhino-
Gímio, an ape.	Rhinocerónte, } ceros.
Armínio, an ermin.	Tígre, a tiger.
Erízo, an hedge-hog.	Puércos montés, a wild boar.
Liébre, an hare.	Navájas, or } míllos de javalí, the sks of a wild boar.
Liebrilla, a leveret.	Lavajál de javáli, the soil of a wild boar.
Conéjo, a rabbit.	
Lirón, a dormouse.	

Creatures that drag on the Earth.

Animáles que se arrastran por Tierra.

Serpiente, a serpent.	Cocodrillo, a crocodile.
Serpiente aláda, a flying serpent.	Lagartija, a lizard.
Dragón, a dragon.	Lagarto, an alligator.
'Aipid, an asp.	Bívora, or víbora, a viper.
Culébra, a snake.	Bivorésno, or viborésno, a young viper.

Amphibious

Amphibious Creatures.

Animáles Amphíbios.

- Bívaro, or } a bever, or Tortúga, or } a tortoise.
Castór, } castor. Galápago, }
Nútria, or } an otter.
Lódra,

Savandújas.

- Arána, a spider.
Arañuéla, a little spider.
Carcóma, a worm in wood.
Orúga, a caterpillar.
Aradór de la mano, an hand-worm.
Sápo, a toad.
Escarabájo, a beetle.
Caracól, a snail.
Hormíga, a pismire, or ant.
Rána, a frog.
Grillo, a chick.
Reboltón, an insect that spoils vines.
Piójo, a louse.
Liéndre, a nit.
Púlga, a flea.

Insectos.

- Chínche, a bug.
Langósta, a locust.
Escorpión, a scorpion.
Tarántula, a tarantula.
Polilla, a moth.
Mósca, a fly.
Moscarda, a wasp.
Abéja, a bee.
Moscón, a great fly.
Zángano, a drone.
Cigarrá, a grasshopper.
Abíspera, or avispa, a wasp.
Tahón, a gad bee, or hornet.
Lucernéja, a fire-fly.
Mariposa, a butter-fly.
Vaquílla de diós, a ladybird.

'Aves.

- Aguila, an eagle.
Aguilúcho, an eaglet.
Búitre, a vulture.
Esmerejón, a merlin.
Gavilán, a sparrow-hawk.
Mochuélo, a tassel-hawk.
Halcón, a falcon.
Torzuélo, a male falcon.
Girifálte, a gerfalcon.
Alcotán, a lanner.
Sácre, a sacre.

Birds.

- Gárza, an heron.
Gárzota, a small heron.
Miláno, a kite.
Cuérvo, a crow, or raven.
Cornéja, a rook.
Calándria, a lark.
Nevecilla, a wagtail.
Canário, a canary bird.
Gilguéro, a goldfinch.
Mírla, a blackbird.
Pinzón, a chafinch.
T 3 Ruisenór,

Ruiñón, a nightingale.	Pávo, a turkey.
Verderón, a greenbird.	Estorníno, a sterling.
Papagáyo, a parrot.	Francolín, a godwit.
Urráca, a magpie.	Faisán, a pheasant.
Grájo, a daw.	Zorzál, a thrush.
Lechúza, an owl.	Hortoláno, an ortolan.
Morciélogo, a bat.	Gorrión, a sparrow.
Mochuélo, a chough.	Perdiz, a partridge.
Cumáya, a night raven.	Palóma, a dove.
Chotacábras, a goat-sucker.	Pichón, a pigeon.
Anade, a duck.	Palomino, a young pigeon.
Cercéta, a teal.	Tórtola, a turtle-dove.
Chirlito, a curlicue.	Alción, a king's-fisher.
Cuervo maríno, a cormorant.	Golondrina, a swallow.
Gánfo, a goose.	Avestrúz, an ostrich.
Páto, a goose.	Ciguéña, a stork.
Ansar, or } the same.	Cucillo, a cuckow.
Anséron, } the same.	Císne, a swan.
Cernícalo, a wind whiffer.	Pitiróxo, a robin-red breast.
Fúlga, a moorhen.	Grúlla, a crane.
Abión, a martin.	Pezpítalo, a wagtail.
Gaviota, a gull.	Chirivía,
Somorgujón, or } a diver.	Abuillo, a lapwing.
Cercéta, } the same.	Oropéndola, a witwal.
Cuervo maríno, a cormorant.	Vencéjo, a martlet.
Chócha, or } a wood-cock.	Abejarúco, a titmouse.
Gallina ciéga } cock.	Abutárda, a bustard.
Tórdo, a stare, or starling.	Tórdo lóco, an owsel.
Codorníz, a quail.	Pelícano, a pelican.
Capón, a capon.	Feníz, or phénix, a phenix.
Gállo, a cock.	Chírlo, a wood-pecker.
Jamón, a hen.	Picovérde, a green beak.
Pollo, a chicken.	Reyezuélo, a plover.
Pólla, a pullet.	Aguzaniéve, a wren.
	Talavilla, a bunting.
	Mérgo, a puffin.

Parts of a Bird.

Pártes de 'Ave.

El pico, <i>the beak.</i>	Búche, <i>the craw.</i>
Pluma, <i>a feather.</i>	Gárras, or } <i>the claws, or</i>
Plumázo, <i>the down.</i>	Uñas, } <i>talons.</i>
'Ala, <i>the wing.</i>	Rabadilla, <i>the rump.</i>
Peñolas, or } <i>quills, or pen-</i>	Pechúga, <i>the wing of a</i>
Penulas, } <i>feathers.</i>	<i>fowl dress'd.</i>
Pié, <i>the foot.</i>	Entrepechúga, <i>the brawn.</i>
Cóla, <i>the tail.</i>	

Pézes.

Abúrno, <i>a bleak.</i>
Sábalo, <i>a rich fish like salmon.</i>
Anchóva, <i>an anchove.</i>
Anguila, <i>an eel.</i>
Ballena, <i>a whale.</i>
Bárbo, <i>a barble.</i>
Méro, <i>the haddock.</i>
Lúso, <i>a pike.</i>
Cárpa, <i>a carp.</i>
Calamaréjo, <i>a calamary.</i>
Talpáire, <i>the miller's thumb.</i>
Cabállo maríno, <i>a sea borse.</i>
Cóngrio, <i>a conger.</i>
Delphín, <i>a dolphin.</i>
Doradillo, <i>the gilt back.</i>
Lenguado, <i>a soal.</i>
Langosta, <i>a lobster.</i>
Esturión, <i>a sturgeon.</i>
Góbio, <i>a gudgeon.</i>
Harénque, <i>a berring.</i>
Ostra, <i>an oyster.</i>

Fishes.

Lampréa, <i>a lamprey.</i>
Langostilla, <i>a prawn.</i>
Lóbo, <i>a bass.</i>
Sárda, <i>a mackarel.</i>
Marsópa, <i>a porpoise.</i>
Abadéxo, <i>poor jack.</i>
Merlúza, <i>stock-fish.</i>
Alméja, <i>a muscle.</i>
Ortiga pez, <i>the stinging-fish.</i>
Pérca, <i>a perch.</i>
Pólpo, <i>a polipus.</i>
Ráya, <i>a thornback.</i>
Líza, <i>skate.</i>
Sardina, <i>a pilchard.</i>
Salmón, <i>salmon.</i>
Xíbia, <i>a cuttle-fish.</i>
Ténca, <i>a tench.</i>
Atún, <i>a tunny fish.</i>
Tremielga, <i>a cramp fish.</i>
Trúcha, <i>a trout.</i>
Rodovállo, <i>a turbot.</i>

*Parts of a Fish.**Pártes del Pez.*

Hocico, <i>the snout.</i>	Huévos de pez, <i>the spawn</i>
Agallas, <i>the gills.</i>	<i>properly the hard row,</i> <i>which is in small grains.</i>
Alas con que náda, <i>the fins.</i>	
Escamas, <i>the scales.</i>	Léche del pez, <i>is the soft</i>
Espinas, <i>the bones.</i>	<i>row.</i>
Cóncha, <i>the shell of such</i> <i>as have one.</i>	

*'Arboles.**Trees.*

Alvaricóque, <i>an apricot tree.</i>	Manzáno, <i>an apple tree.</i>
Alméndro, <i>an almond tree.</i>	'Alamo negro, <i>an alder tree, or black poplar.</i>
Durázno, <i>a peach tree.</i>	Alamo blanco, <i>the common poplar.</i>
Guíndo, <i>a cherry tree.</i>	Cédro, <i>a cedar tree.</i>
Cerézo, <i>an bart cherry tree.</i>	Sahúco, <i>an elder tree.</i>
Caftáno, <i>a chestnut tree.</i>	Enzina, <i>or } an oak.</i>
Cídro, <i>a citron tree.</i>	Róble, <i>{ } an oak.</i>
Membrillo, <i>a quince tree.</i>	Cornízo, <i>the cornel tree.</i>
Serval, <i>a service tree.</i>	Cyprés, <i>the cypress tree.</i>
Pálma, <i>a date tree.</i>	'Ebano, <i>the ebony tree.</i>
Higuéra, <i>a fig tree.</i>	Arze, <i>the maple.</i>
Azuféifo, <i>a jujub tree.</i>	Háya, <i>the beach.</i>
Granádo, <i>a pomgranate tree.</i>	Frésno, <i>the ash.</i>
Limón, <i>a lemon tree.</i>	Azébo, <i>the holm, or holly oak.</i>
Morál, <i>a mulberry tree.</i>	Téxo, <i>the ewe tree.</i>
Nispelo, <i>a medlar tree.</i>	Laurél, <i>the laurel.</i>
Avelláno, <i>a nut tree.</i>	Alcornóque, <i>the cork tree.</i>
Nogál, <i>a walnut tree.</i>	Olmo, <i>the elm.</i>
Olivo, <i>or Azeitúno, an olive tree.</i>	Píno, <i>a pine tree, or fir tree.</i>
Azebúche, <i>a wild olive tree.</i>	Plántano, <i>a plane tree.</i>
Naranjo, <i>an orange tree.</i>	Sauze, <i>a willow tree.</i>
Alvérchigo, <i>a peach tree.</i>	Téjo, <i>the linden tree.</i>
Ciruélo, <i>a plum tree.</i>	
Perál, <i>a pear tree.</i>	

Arbolillos,

Arbolillos, or Mátas.

Agnocásto, <i>the agnus castus.</i>	Brúsco, <i>butcher's broom.</i>
Alíso, <i>the lote tree.</i>	Alhócigo, <i>the pistacho tree.</i>
Bálamo, <i>the balsam tree.</i>	Regaliz, or regalicia, <i>the liquorice-tree.</i>
Bóx, <i>the box tree.</i>	
Madresélva, <i>the honey-suckle-tree.</i>	Roméro, <i>rosemary.</i>
Zarzamóro, <i>the blackberry-bush.</i>	Rosál, <i>a rose tree.</i>
Hiniésta, <i>broom.</i>	Savína, <i>savin.</i>
Uva espino, <i>a gooseberry-bush.</i>	Tamariz, <i>a tamarind tree.</i>
Adélpha, <i>ivy.</i>	Aléña, <i>privet.</i>
	Viña, <i>a vine.</i>
	Labrusca, <i>a wild wine.</i>
	Párra, <i>a wall vine.</i>

Fruta,

Albaricóque, <i>an apricot.</i>	Naranja, <i>an orange.</i>
Alméndra, <i>an almond.</i>	Alvéraligo, <i>a peach.</i>
Madróño, <i>a fruit like a strawberry.</i>	Ciruela, <i>a plumb.</i>
Durázno, <i>a peach.</i>	Ciruela passa, <i>a prune.</i>
Guínda, <i>a cherry.</i>	Péra, <i>a pear.</i>
Ceréza, <i>an heart-cherry.</i>	Péra bergamota, <i>a bergamot-pear.</i>
Castaña, <i>a chestnut.</i>	Manzana, <i>an apple.</i>
Cídra, <i>a citron.</i>	Camuésa, <i>a pippin.</i>
Membrillo, <i>a quince.</i>	Manzana de S. Juan, <i>a John-apple.</i>
Sérva, <i>service.</i>	Uva espín, <i>a gooseberry.</i>
Dátil, <i>a date.</i>	Melocotón, <i>a melocotoon.</i>
Higo, <i>a fig.</i>	Melón, <i>a melon.</i>
Bréva, <i>the first fig.</i>	Bellota, <i>an acorn.</i>
Azufáifa, <i>a jujub.</i>	Algarróba, <i>a carob.</i>
Granáda, <i>a pomegranate.</i>	Alcaparra, <i>a caper.</i>
Limón, <i>a lemon.</i>	Zárza móra, <i>a blackberry.</i>
Móra, <i>a mulberry.</i>	Tamariz, <i>a tamarind.</i>
Níspero, <i>a medlar.</i>	Piñón, <i>the kernel of a pine-apple.</i>
Avellána, <i>a hazel nut.</i>	Uva, <i>a grape.</i>
Nuéz, <i>a walnut.</i>	
Azeituna, <i>an olive.</i>	

Things belonging to Fruit and Trees,
Cosas tocantes a Frutas y Arboles.

Cáscara de granáda, nuéz, Raíz, *a root.*

&c. the shell of a pomegranate, nut, or the like. Hébras de raíz, *the fibres of a root.*

Telita de granáda, o ótra Arraigár, *to take root.*

semejante fruta, the thin film in the pomegranate, or such fruit. Trónco, *the trunk of a tree.* Cortéza del árbol, *the bark.*

Pimpollo, the sucker or sprout of a vine. Móho, *the moss.*

Rámo, *a branch.*

Sarmiento, *a twig of a vine.* Hója, *a leaf.*

Yéma de viña, *the bud of a vine.* Cuésco de fruta, *the stone of fruit.*

Zarcillos de la vid, *the tendrils of a vine.* Mondadúras de fruta, *the paring of fruit.*

Pámpano, *a vine branch.* Pezón, *the stalk.*

Renuévo de vid, *a young shoot of a vine.* Engerir, or ingerir, *to engraft.*

Racimo de úvas, *a bunch of grapes.* Almáciga, *a nursery of trees.*

Pepita de la úva, *a grape-stone.* Arboléda, *a grove.*

Arbol silvestre, *a wild tree.*

Podár, *to prune.*

Plantár, *to plant.*

Escavár, *to lay open the roots.* Marhojár, *to bark trees.*

Rodrigár, *to prop a vine.* Engerit de púa, *to engraft.*

Desojár, *to nip the superfluous leaves of the vine.* Engerit de cañuto, *to inoculate.*

Cavár, *to dig about a vine.* Pepita, *the seed or small kernel of fruit.*

Rozár, *to weed.*

Corn, and its Parts,

Trigos, y sus Partes.

Trigo, *wheat.* Trigo rubión, *red wheat.*

Trigo candiál, *the best wheat.* Escándia, *bearded wheat.*

Herrén, *milling corn.*

Espélta,

Espéltia, spelt.	Tallo de la espiga, the stem.
Centéno, rye.	Núdo de la espiga, the knot under the ear.
Ceváda, barley.	Núdo del tallo, the joyn't of the stem.
Avéna, oats.	Gránza, the busk or chaff.
Arróz, rice.	Ráspe de la espiga, the beard.
Mijo, millet.	
Mijo gránde, or Maíz,	
Arvéjas, or Guifántes,	
Hába, a bean.	

Legúmbres,

Pulses.

Alverjón, a great vetch.	Lantéja, a lentil.
Garvánzos, a sort of spanish peas.	Altramúz, a lupin.
Arvéjas, or Guifántes,	Judía, a french bean.
Hába, a bean.	Zicerchás, tares.
	Cáscara, the cod.
	Holléjo, the busk.

Roots, Plants, and Herbs.

Rayces, Plantás, y Yérvas.

Ajénjo, wormwood.	Cóles, coleworts.
'Apio, smallage.	Bérza, cabbage.
'Ajo, garlick.	Repollo, a sprout.
Enéldo, dil.	Colyflór, coliflower.
Anís, aniseed.	Calabáza, a pumpion or gourd.
Armuéllas, orach, or golden flowers.	Pepíno, a cucumber.
Alcachófa, an artichoke.	Perejil de la mar, sam- pbire.
Espárago, asparagus.	Mastuérzo, garden cresses.
Abrótano, southernewood.	Escalona, a scallion.
Acélga, white beet.	Escaróla, endive.
Blédo, a blite.	Espináca, spinage.
Borrája, borage.	Hinójo, fennel.
Cárdo, a thistle.	Hoblón, hops.
Zanahórias, carrots.	Lechúga, a lettice.
Voléza, chervil.	Lechúga cerrá- da, or Murciána, cabbage le. tice.
Hóngo, a mushroom.	Lechúga crespa, curly lettice.
Chirivía, a skirret.	
Achicória, succory or endive.	Nábo,

Nábo, <i>a turnep.</i>	Genciana, gentian.
Cebolla, <i>an onion.</i>	Camedréos de agua, ger-mander.
Acetósa, <i>french sorrel.</i>	Hierba puntera, houseleek.
Romáza, <i>long sorrel.</i>	Veléno, henbane.
Azedéra, <i>common sorrel.</i>	Marrúbio, borebound.
Perexil, <i>parsley.</i>	Matricaria, feverfew.
Puérra, <i>a leek.</i>	Málvas, mallows.
Verdolága, <i>purflain.</i>	Coróna de rey, melilot.
Ruíponces, <i>rampions.</i>	Torongil, balm.
Xaramágó, or } rocket.	Mercurial, mercury.
Ruqueta, } rocket.	Mil hójas, or } milfoil.
Rúda, <i>rue.</i>	Ciénto en rama, }
Sálvia, <i>sage.</i>	Corazoncillo, St. John's wort.
Criadilla de tierra, <i>a trufle or pignut.</i>	Nárdo, spikenard.
Marjeróna, <i>sweet marjoram.</i>	Orégano, origanum.
Culántrro, <i>coriander.</i>	Tabáco, tobacco.
Agárico, <i>agarick.</i>	Parietaria, pellitory.
Gaféte, or } agrimony.	Cepacavállo, ground thistle.
Epatório, } agrimony.	Dormidéra, poppey.
Acíbar, <i>aloes.</i>	Perficária, arfesmart.
Angélica, <i>angelico.</i>	Pervínca, perwinkle.
Celidónia, <i>celandine.</i>	Rósá montés, piony.
Betónica, <i>betony.</i>	Llantén, plantain.
Bistórta, <i>bistort or snake-weed.</i>	Polipodio, polypody.
Manzanilla, <i>camomile.</i>	Axeniz, or } bishop's wort.
Culantrillo de pózo, <i>maiden-hair.</i>	Neguilla, }
Centória, <i>centory.</i>	Hierba cárdena, briony.
Coloquintida, <i>coloquintida.</i>	Poléo, pemiroyal.
Verbásco, or } wolfslade or	Elebóro, belebore.
Gardolóbo, } greatlungwort.	Ruybarbo, rheubarb.
Hamapóla, <i>a poppey.</i>	Sanguinária, bloodwort.
Dítam, <i>ditony.</i>	Sanícula, self-heal.
Artadegua, <i>fleabane.</i>	Sarazinéscá, heart-wort.
Eléboro, <i>belebore.</i>	Satyrión, ragwort.
Tártago, <i>spurge.</i>	Saxifrágia, saxifrage.
	Escabiosa, scabious.
	Escamónéa, scammony.
	Cebolla

Cebolla albarrana, a wild onion.	Líno, flax.
Alfórvas, fenugreek.	Cegúta, hemlock.
Hierba cána, ground-sell.	Halécho, fern.
Valeriána, valerian.	Palomilla, fumitory.
Verbena, vervein.	Yézgo, danewort, or dwarf elder.
Bránca ursina, bears foot.	Júnco, a rush.
Acónito, wolfsbane.	Cerrája, sow thistle.
Espiégo, lavender spike.	Mandrágora, mandrake.
Amor del horteláno, burdock.	Morella, night shade.
Perejil de agua, water parsley.	Correhuélala, knot grass.
Tamariz silvestre, tamarisk shrub.	Ortiga, a nettle.
Afarabáca, asarabacca.	Valefa, peppermint.
Calaminto, catmint.	Azafrán, saffron.
Caña, a reed.	Xabonéra, soap-wort.
Doradilla, mules fern.	Alfalfa, darnel.
Cáñamo, hemp.	Albaháca, sweet basil.
	Hierbabuénula, mint.
	Sépol, wild thyme.
	Tomillo, thyme.

Flóres,

Jacinto, the hyacinth.
Jasmin, jasmin.
Junquillo, the junquill.
Azucéna, a lilly.
Máya, a daisy.
Narcísso, the daffodil.
Clavél, a pink.
Amaránto, the velvet flower.
Peónia, a peony.

Colores,

Morado, purple.
Colór de auróra, aurora colour.
Blanco, white.

Flowers.

Vellorita, a cowslip.
Ranúnculo, the ranunculus.
Rósa, a rose.
Maravilla, a marigold.
Girasol, the sun-flower.
Tulipán, a tulip.
Violéta, a violet.
Aléli, a white violet.
Capullo, a rose-bud.

Colours.

Colór de ladrillo, brick colour.
Azul, blue.
Colombino, dove-colour.
Limonádo,

Limonádo, <i>lemon colour.</i>	Grána, <i>scarlet.</i>
Amúsco, <i>filamot.</i>	Leonádo, <i>tawny.</i>
Colór de lláma, <i>flame colour.</i>	Negro, <i>black.</i>
Colór de fuégo, <i>fire colour.</i>	Anaranjádo, <i>orange colour.</i>
Carmesí, <i>crimson.</i>	Azeitunádo, <i>olive colour.</i>
Párdo, <i>grey.</i>	Róxo, or } red. Colorádo,
Ceniciente, <i>ash colour.</i>	Berméjo, <i>reddish.</i>
Amarillo, <i>yellow.</i>	Colór de rósa, <i>rose colour.</i>
Encarnádo, <i>carnation.</i>	Vérde, <i>green.</i>
Virtúdes y Vícios, <i>buénas y malas Calidádes de los Hombres.</i>	Colór de mar, <i>sea-green.</i>

Virtues and Vices, good and bad Qualities of Men.

R Ecatádo, <i>cautious.</i>	Reboltoso, <i>mutinous.</i>
Diéstro, <i>dextrous.</i>	Bien criado, <i>well-bred.</i>
Dócil, <i>docil.</i>	Cortés, <i>courteous.</i>
Galán, <i>gallant.</i>	Gráve, <i>sober.</i>
Simple, <i>harmless.</i>	Jústo, <i>just.</i>
Agúdo, <i>sharp.</i>	Prudente, <i>discreet.</i>
Vívo, <i>sprightly.</i>	Desvergonzádo, <i>impudent.</i>
Sutil, <i>subtil.</i>	Fogoso, <i>fiery.</i>
Chocarreiro, <i>given to buffoonry.</i>	Impertinente, <i>impertinent.</i>
Nécio, <i>foolish.</i>	Importuno, <i>troublesome.</i>
Astuto, <i>crafty.</i>	Ligero, <i>light.</i>
Lóco, <i>mad.</i>	Descuidado, <i>careless.</i>
Malicioso, <i>malicious.</i>	Temerario, <i>rash.</i>
Temeroso, <i>fearful.</i>	Afable, <i>affable.</i>
Espantadizo, <i>apt to be frightened.</i>	Amigable, <i>friendly.</i>
Valeroso, <i>brave.</i>	Bizarro, <i>brave.</i>
Tonto, <i>stupid.</i>	Charitativo, <i>charitable.</i>
Fantáctico, <i>fantastical.</i>	Cásto, <i>chaste.</i>
Embástero, <i>deceitful.</i>	Constante, <i>constant.</i>
Desatinádo, <i>disfracted.</i>	Devoto, <i>devout.</i>
Grosiéro, <i>clownish.</i>	Diligente, <i>diligent.</i>
	Fiél, <i>faithful.</i>
	Generoso, <i>generous.</i>

Humilde

Humilde, <i>bumble.</i>	Rabióso, <i>outrageous.</i>
Misericordioso, <i>merciful.</i>	Alégre, <i>merry.</i>
Paciénte, <i>patient.</i>	Ufano, <i>gay.</i>
Religióso, <i>religious.</i>	Indeciso, <i>irresolute.</i>
Ambicioso, <i>ambitious.</i>	Zeloso, <i>jealous.</i>
Sobrio, <i>proud.</i>	Adúltero, <i>an adulterer.</i>
Avariénto, <i>covetous.</i>	Rufián, <i>a ruffian.</i>
Hypócrita, <i>an hypocrite.</i>	Matadór, <i>a murderer.</i>
Cobarde, <i>a coward.</i>	Blasphemadór, <i>a blasphemer.</i>
Holgazán, <i>idle.</i>	Salteadór, <i>a highway-man.</i>
Altivo, <i>haughty.</i>	Juradór, <i>a swearer.</i>
Chismoso, <i>a tales-bearer.</i>	Calumniadór, <i>a slanderer.</i>
Aduladór, <i>a flatterer.</i>	Murmuradór, <i>a censurer.</i>
Goloso, <i>a glutton.</i>	Hechicero, <i>a sorcerer.</i>
Desleal, <i>faithless.</i>	Trampóso, <i>a cheat.</i>
Desagradecido, <i>ungrateful.</i>	Homicida, <i>a murderer.</i>
Inhumano, <i>inhumane.</i>	Incestuoso, <i>incestuous.</i>
Insolente, <i>insolent.</i>	Ladrón, <i>a thief.</i>
Luxurioso, <i>lewd.</i>	Mentiroso, <i>a lyar.</i>
Porfiado, <i>positive.</i>	Perjuró, <i>perjur'd.</i>
Perezoso, <i>slackful.</i>	Pérfido, <i>perfidious.</i>
Pródigo, <i>prodigal.</i>	Profano, <i>profane.</i>
Váno, <i>vain.</i>	Rebelde, <i>a rebel.</i>
Mugeriégo, <i>given to women.</i>	Sacrílego, <i>a sacrilegious person.</i>
Atrevido, <i>bold.</i>	Traidor, <i>a traitor.</i>
Colérico, <i>passionate.</i>	

Pártes de un Réino,

Parts of a Kingdom.

Província, <i>a province.</i>	Aldéa, <i>a village.</i>
Ciudad, <i>a city.</i>	Distrítio, <i>a district.</i>
Villa, <i>a market town.</i>	

Pártes de una Ciudád,

Parts of a City.

Cása, <i>a house.</i>	Iglesia, or } <i>a church.</i>
Tienda, <i>a shop.</i>	Témplo, } <i>a church.</i>

Palácio,

Palácio, a palace.	Mercádo, a market.
Hospitál, an hospital.	Cárnicería, the shambles.
Cása de la villa, or del ayuntamiento, the town house.	Encrucijáda, a cross way.
Tribunál, a court of justice.	Lónja, or } an exchange.
Arsenál, an arsenal.	Bólsa, } Cárcel, a prison.
Académia, an academy.	Muros, or } the walls.
Colégio, a college.	Murállas, } Fortificaciones, fortifications.
Calle, a street.	Plazuéla, a little market
Callejón, an ally.	or square.
Calleja, or } a lane.	Callejuéla,

Of the Inhabitants of Cities,
De los Moradóres de las Ciudádes.

Níño, a child.	El poblácho, or la plébe, the mob.
Muchácho, a boy.	Canálla, the rabbler.
Muchácha, a girl.	Ciudadáno, a citizen.
Mózo, a youth.	Oficiál, a tradesman.
Hómbre, a man.	Mecánico, a mechanick.
Mugér, a woman.	Labradór, a peasant.
Viéjo, an old man.	Aldeáno, a countryman.
Viéja, an old woman.	Pícaro, a rogue.
Decrépito, one that is decrepit.	Esclávo, a slave.
Cóxo, lame of the legs.	Platélo, a goldsmith.
Mánco, lame of the hands.	Libréro, a bookseller.
Ciégo, blind.	Barbéro, a barber.
Sórdo, lame.	Mercadér de séda, a mercer.
Magistrádo, a magistrate.	Mercadér de páño, a woollen-draper.
Nóble, noble.	Mercadér de liénzo, a linnen-draper.
Hidálgo, a gentleman.	Sástre, a taylor.
Caballéro, a knight.	Costuréra, a seamstress.
Tendéro, a shop-keeper.	Sombrerero, a batter.
Mercaér, or } Hombre de negocio, a merchant.	Calcetéro, a bofier.
	Zapatéro,

Zapatéro, a shoe-maker.	Juéz, a judge.
Herréro, a smith.	Carceléro, a goalar.
Albéitar, a farrier.	Verdugo, the executioner.
Cerrajéro, a lock-smith.	Ceréro, a wax-chandler.
Lavandéra, a laundress.	Ganapán, or { a porter to
Comádre, } or Partera, } a midwife.	esportilléro, } carry burdens.
Médico, a physician.	Remendón, a botcher, or
Cirujano, a surgeon.	cobler.
Charlatán, a mountebank.	Tataravuélo, a grandfather.
Sacamuélas, a tooth-drawer.	ther's grandfather.
Silléro, a sadler.	Bissavuélo, a great grandfather.
Carpintéro, a carpenter.	Avuélo, a grandfather.
Peón, a labourer.	Pádre, a father.
Albañil, a bricklayer.	Mádre, a mother.
Pintór, a painter.	Hijo, a son.
Panadéro, a baker.	Hija, a daughter.
Carnicéro, a butcher.	Nieto, a grandson.
Frutéra, a fruiterer.	Bisniéto, a great grandson.
Verduléra, an herb-woman.	Hermáno, a brother.
Pasteléro, a pastry-cook.	Cuñádo, a brother in law.
Tabernéro, a vintner.	Padrástro, a step-father.
Cervezéro, a brewer.	Madrástra, a stepmother.
Mesonéro, an inn-keeper.	Suégro, the husband's, or
Ventéro, the same.	the wife's father.
Reloxéro, a watchmaker.	Nuéra, the wife of the son.
Pregonéro, a cryer, or hawker.	Yérno, the husband of the daughter.
Joyéro, a jeweller.	Prímo hermáno, a cousin german.
Boticário, an apothecary.	Tío, an uncle.
Buhonéro, a pedlar.	Sobrino, a nephew.
Vidriéro, a glazier.	Prímo segúndo, a second cousin.
Carbonéro, a collier.	Marido, an husband.
Jardinéro, a gardiner.	Mugér, a wife.
Letrádo, a learned man, or a lawyer.	Nóvio, a bridegroom.
Procuradór, a solicitor.	Desposado, one betrothed.
Abogádo, an advocate, or counsellor at law.	U. Ahijádo,

Ahijádo, <i>a godson.</i>	Víudo, <i>a widower.</i>
Padrino, <i>a godfather.</i>	Hermáno de leche, <i>a foster- brother.</i>
Madrína, <i>a godmother.</i>	
Compádre, <i>an he-gossip.</i>	Níño de la piédra, <i>a found- ling.</i>
Comádre, <i>a gossip.</i>	
Compañero, <i>or } a com- Camaráda, } panion.</i>	Níño supuesto, <i>a false child.</i> Bastárdo, <i>a bastard.</i>
Mellízo, <i>a twin.</i>	Donzélla, <i>a maiden.</i>
Cofráde, <i>a brother of the same society.</i>	Mugér casada, <i>a married woman.</i>
Cofradía, <i>a guild or society.</i>	Mugér parida, <i>a lying-in woman.</i>
Communidád, <i>a company.</i>	
Huérzano, <i>an orphan.</i>	'Ama de leche, <i>a wet nurse.</i>
Soltéro, <i>a bachelor.</i>	Mancéba, <i>a lewd mistress.</i>
Heredéro, <i>an heir.</i>	Raméra, <i>or, } a whore.</i>
Tutór, <i>a tutor.</i>	Púea,
Curadór, <i>a guardian.</i>	

A House, and all that belongs to it.

Casa, y todo lo perteneciente a ella.

Cása, a house.	Artezón, an arch'd cieling.
El solár, the ground the house stands upon.	Bóveda, a vault.
Cimiénto, the foundation.	Alto de Cása, a story of a house.
Paréd, a wall.	Escaléra, a stair-case.
Pátio, a court.	Tejado, a til'd roof.
Facháda, the front.	Puérta, a door.
Un andár or áltó, a floor.	Passadizo, a passage or en- try.
Portál, a porch.	Corrál, a court-yard.
Ventána, a window.	Trascorrál, a back-yard.
Entresuéllo, a low room or floor between the upper and lower that are more lofty.	Cámara, a bed-chamber. Aposénto, or } a chamber. Pieza,
Zaquizamí, or ciélo, the cieling; also the space be- tween the cieling and the roof of a house, and a cock loft.	Quárto, an apartment. Anticámara, an anticham- ber.
	Requádra, a back room.
	Sála, a hall.

Corredor

Corredór, a gallery.	Umbrál, the threshold.
Retréte, a closet.	Bastidores de la puerta, the frame of the door.
Estúdio, a study.	Postigo, a wicket.
Armário, or } a cupboard.	Quícos, or } binges.
Alazéna, } a cupboard.	Góznes,
Escaparáte, a press for cloaths, or the like.	Cerradúra, a lock.
Guárda róba, a wardrobe.	Cerradúra de golpe, a spring-lock.
Alcóva, an alcove.	Candádo, a padlock.
Desván, a garret.	Pestillo, the bolt of a lock.
Balcón, or } a balcony.	Cerrójo, a bolt.
Miradór, }	Lláve, a key.
Azutéa, the flat roof of an house.	Ventanilla, a little window.
Camaranchón, a cockloft.	Picapórte, a latch.
Tórre, a tower.	Tráncá de puerta, the bar of a door.
Bodéga, or } a cellar.	Guardas de la lláve, the wards of a lock.
Cuéva, }	Cañuto de lláve, the pipe of a key.
Repostería, the butler's room.	Vidriéra, the glass of the window.
Despénsla, a buttery or pan- try.	Réjas de ventána, the bars of a window.
Cozína, a kitchen.	Escaléra de caracól, a winding stair-case.
Caballeríza, the stable.	Llános de escaléra, the landing places of stairs.
Perrería, a dog-kennel.	Descánso de escaléra, the half pace of stairs.
Palomár, a dove-house.	Gráda, or } a step.
Gallinéro, a hen-roost.	Escalón, }
Jardín, a garden.	Escaléra secreta, backstairs.
Párque, a park.	Víga, a beam.
Priváda, or } the privy.	Vigón, the girder, or main beam.
Necessária, }	Tábla, a board.
Coronilla del edificio, the top of the structure.	Cruzéro, a rafter.
Téja, a tile.	U
Pizárra, a slate.	Ladrillo,
Rípia, a shingle.	
'Aла de tejado, the eves of the house.	
Canál, the gutter.	

Ladrillo, a brick.	Rodapiés, the bases of the bed.
Paré de en medio, the party-wall.	Tapete, a carpet.
Paré de cal y canto, a wall of lime and stone.	Sávanas, sheets.
Tabique, a lath and plaster partition.	Frazadas, blankets.
Cal, lime or plaster.	Covertor, the counterpane.
Argamassa, mortar.	Almohadás, pillows.
Encostradura de paré, the plaster of a wall.	Tapicería, tapestry.
Yesso, very fine white lime.	Pintura, or quadro, a picture.
Jalbague, white-wash.	Espéjo, a looking-glass.
Messa, a table.	Candelero, a candlestick.
Banco, a bench.	Despaviladeras, snuffers.
Silla, a chair.	Araña, a branch to hold many candles.
Silla de brazos, an arm-chair.	Yésca, tinder.
Taburete, a chair with a back.	Pajuéla, a match.
Sitiál, a stool without a back.	Pedernál, a flint.
Banquillo, a stool.	Eslabón, the steel to strike fire.
Cáxa, a box.	Oriná, a chamber-pot.
Arca, or arcón, a chest.	Cojchón, a quilt to lie on.
Caxón, a case of drawers.	Cólcha, a quilt to lay on the bed.
Tiradór, a drawer.	Cátre, a couch.
Escritorio, a cabinet.	Cáma de campo, a field-bed.
Cáma, a bed.	Testera de cáma, the bed's head.
Lécho, the part of the bed that is laid on.	Colunas de cáma, the bed-posts.
Armadura, or maderage de cáma, a bedstead.	Xergón, a straw-bed.
Cielo de la cáma, the bed's tester.	Esterá, a mat.
Cortinas de cáma, bed-curtains.	Calentadór de cáma, a warming pan.
	Chimenéa, a kitchen.
	Respiradéro, or cañón de chimenéa, the funnel of the chimney.
	Morillo.

Morillos, <i>andirons.</i>	Herráda, <i>a bucket or pail.</i>
Fuélls, <i>bellows.</i>	Cúbo, <i>a tub.</i>
Tenázas, <i>tongues.</i>	Lexía, <i>or } lye.</i>
Pála, <i>or badíl, a shovel.</i>	Coláda, <i>} lye.</i>
Guárda fuégo, <i>a skreen.</i>	Xabón, <i>soap.</i>
Urgadór, <i>misadór, a poker.</i>	Levadúra, <i>leaven.</i>
Olla, <i>a pottage-pot.</i>	Rodilla de cozina, <i>a coarse kitchin cloth.</i>
Tapadéra, <i>the pot-lid.</i>	Estropájo, <i>a dish-clout.</i>
Afa, <i>the ear of the pot.</i>	Pála del horno, <i>the peel for the oven.</i>
Puchéro, <i>a pipkin.</i>	Harína, <i>meal.</i>
Cucharón, <i>a ladle.</i>	Salvádos, <i>bran.</i>
Caldéra, <i>a kettle.</i>	Artéssa, <i>a tray.</i>
Escalfadór, <i>a chafing-dish.</i>	Mantéles, <i>table-cloth.</i>
Trévedes, <i>a treves.</i>	Servilléta, <i>a napkin.</i>
Hornillo, <i>a stove.</i>	Aguamanil, <i>an ewer.</i>
Hórno, <i>an oven.</i>	Almofía, <i>a bason.</i>
Sartén, <i>a frying-pan.</i>	Toálla, <i>a towel.</i>
Cázo, <i>a sauce-pan.</i>	Platillos, <i>plates.</i>
Cazuéla, <i>a little pan.</i>	Cuchíllo, <i>a knife.</i>
Escumedéra, <i>a skimmer.</i>	Tenedór, <i>a fork.</i>
Parrillas, <i>a gridiron.</i>	Saléro, <i>salt.</i>
Coladéro, <i>a colander, or streiner.</i>	Pláto, <i>a dish.</i>
Cedázo, <i>a sieve.</i>	Escudilla, <i>a porringer.</i>
Rállo, <i>a grater.</i>	Cuchára, <i>a spoon.</i>
Agúja de mechár, <i>a larding-pin.</i>	Tajadór, <i>a chopping-block.</i>
Affadór, <i>a spit.</i>	Jarro, <i>a mug.</i>
Azeitéra, <i>or } an oyl pot.</i>	Tázá, <i>a cup or dish.</i>
Alcúza, <i>} an oyl pot.</i>	Salvilla, <i>a salver.</i>
Vinagéra, <i>a cruet.</i>	Elásco, <i>a flask, or bottle.</i>
Almiréz, <i>a metal mortar.</i>	Vídrio, <i>a glass.</i>
Mortéro, <i>a stone mortar.</i>	Mondadiéntes, <i>a tooth-picker.</i>
Máno de mortéro, <i>a pestle.</i>	Mayordómo, <i>a steward.</i>
Braseríllo, <i>a chafing-dish.</i>	Trinchante, <i>a carver.</i>
Redóma, <i>a vial.</i>	Secretário, <i>a secretary.</i>
Sumidéro, <i>a sink.</i>	Camaréro, <i>a chamberlain, or valet de chambre.</i>
Antaro, <i>a pitcher.</i>	U 3 Despenséro,

Despensero, a caterer, or clerk of the kitchen.	Maestre sala, a sewer.
Capellán, a chaplain.	Bodeguero, a butler.
Limosnero, an almoner.	Repostero, a butler.
Páge, a page.	Halconero, a falconer.
Lacayo, a footman.	Cozinero, a cook.
Cochero, a coachman.	Galopín, a scullion.
Mózo de caballos, a groom.	Portero, a porter.
Caballerizo, a gentleman of the horse.	Casero, or hu- ésped, da- } the land- éño, or amo } lord. Copero, a cupbearer.
	de la casa,

Of Country Affairs.
De las cosas del Campo.

Alquería, a country or farm house.	Rastrillo, the harrow.
Quintero, a farmer.	Sembradór, a sower.
Boyero, or } a cow-keeper.	Escaradór, a weeder.
Vaquero, } a swine- porquerizo, } herd.	Rozadór, a weeding-book.
Porquéro, or } a swine- porquerizo, } herd.	Segadór, a reaper.
Pastór, a shepherd.	Guanána, a scythe.
Zurón, a scrip.	Trillo, a tail.
Cayado, a shepherd's crook.	Hórca, a fork.
Honda, a sling.	Viéldo, a winnowing fan.
Orteláno, or } a gardiner.	Pescadór, a fisherman.
Jardinero, } a ditcher.	Red barredéra, a drag-net.
Vinadéro, a vine dresser.	Vára, or caña pára pescár, a fishing rod.
Azada, or } a spade.	Sedál de la caña, a fishing- line.
Azadón, } a man.	Anzuélo, a fishing-book.
Aradór, or } a plough-	Cazadór, a buntsman.
Labradór, } man.	Cébo, a bait.
Arado, a plough.	Liga, birdlime.
Estéva, or } a plough	Jáula, a cage.
Manzera, } handle.	Obréro, or } a day la- Jornalero, } bourer.
Réja del arado, a plough- share.	Añéro, a keeper of asses.
	Hómbre

Hómbre del campo,	a Bóbeda de párras, <i>an ar-</i> <i>country-man.</i>	<i>bour.</i>
Cámpo que descansa,	a Labérynto, <i>a labyrinth.</i>	<i>fallow-field.</i>
Tierra entre los súlcos,	Grúta, <i>a grotte.</i>	<i>ridge.</i>
Súlco, <i>a furrow.</i>	Cascáda, <i>a cascade.</i>	
Trigo en hiérba, <i>green</i> <i>corn.</i>	Fuénte, <i>a fountain.</i>	
Tierra inculta, <i>land not</i> <i>till'd.</i>	Chórro dé agua, <i>a water-</i> <i>spout.</i>	
Monte, or } a bill, or Montaña, } mountain.	Pilón de fuénte, <i>the vase</i> <i>of a fountain.</i>	
Cuesta, or } a little bill. Collado, }	Encañado, or } an aqueduct. aqüeducto,	
Cerro, <i>a rising ground.</i>	Hortaliza, <i>all sorts of</i> <i>herbage.</i>	
Valle, <i>a valley.</i>	Plánta, <i>a plant.</i>	
Abismo, <i>a bottomless pit.</i>	Camino real, <i>the high-way.</i>	
Zanja, <i>a ditch.</i>	Sénda, or } a path. Vereda,	
Languna, <i>a lake, or marsh.</i>	Pisada, or } a track. Rastro,	
Llanura, <i>a plain.</i>	Cavalgadura, <i>a beast for</i> <i>the saddle.</i>	
Peña, or } a rock. Roca,	Carréta, <i>a waggon.</i>	
Penasco, <i>a great rock.</i>	Cárro, <i>a cart.</i>	
Despeñadéro, <i>a precipice.</i>	Rueda, <i>a wheel.</i>	
Bosque, <i>a forest.</i>	Ráyo de ruéda, <i>the spoke</i> <i>of a wheel.</i>	
Esplanada, <i>a curious plain.</i>	Llantas, or } the felloes of Cámbas, }	
Mata, <i>a thicket.</i>	Cubo de ruéda, <i>the nave of</i> <i>the wheel.</i>	
Zarza, <i>a bramble.</i>	Exe de ruéda, <i>the axle-</i> <i>tree.</i>	
Espina, <i>a thorn.</i>	Estaca, or } the pin of a Clavo, }	
Prado, <i>a meadow.</i>	Caléssa, <i>a calocbe or chaise.</i>	
Vergel, <i>a garden, a bower.</i>	Litera, <i>a horse litter.</i>	
Huerta, <i>an orchard.</i>	Andas, <i>the shafts.</i>	
Jardín, <i>a garden.</i>	Cóche, or carróna, <i>a coach.</i>	
Era de jardín, <i>a bed in a</i> <i>garden.</i>	U 4	Rástra,
Glorieta de jardín, <i>a bed</i> <i>of flowers.</i>		
Almácíega, <i>a seed-plot.</i>		

Rástra, or } a sledge.
 Nárria, }
 Césta, a basket.
 Canásta, a flasket.
 Espuérta, a dirt-basket.
 Cherrión, a dung-cart.
 Banásta, a great hamper.
 Alfója, a wallet.

Bolsa, a purse.
 Costál, or } a sack.
 Sáco, }
 Maléta, a portmanteau.
 Talégo, a bag.
 Valíja, a cloak bag.
 Zurrón, a budget or scrip.

The Church, and Things pertaining to Religion.
Iglésia, y cosas Religiosas.

Náve de iglésia, the isle of a church.	Misflál, a mass-book.
Cimbório, the dome.	Sotána, a cassock.
Pináculo, a pinnacle.	Sobrepelliz, a surplice.
Chóro, the choir.	Roquéte, a short surplice.
Capilla, a chapel.	Bonéte, a cap.
Atril, a desk.	Mitra, a miter.
Sacrístia, the vestry.	Báculo, a crozier.
Campanário, the belfry.	Patriárcha, a patriarch.
Campána, a bell.	Arzobíspº, an archbishop.
Badájo, the clapper of the bell.	Obíspº, a bishop.
Pila de bautizár, the font.	Obispado, a bishopric.
Ísopo, a sprinkler.	Diocésis, a diocese.
Confessionário, a confession- seat.	Coadjutór, a coadjutor.
Tribúna, a tribune, or gal- lery.	Sufragáneo, a suffragan.
Cimentério, the church- yard.	Sacerdóte, a priest.
Ostário, the charnel.	Sacerdócio, priesthood.
Altár, an altar.	Diácono, a deacon.
Frontál, an antependium.	Subdiácono, a subdeacon.
Tabernáculo, or } the ta- Sagrário, } bernacle.	Acólito, one that serves the priest at the altar.
Pálio, a canopy.	Lectór, a reader.
Mantel del altár, the altar- cloth.	Clérigo, a clergyman.
	Preládo, a prelate.
	Abád, an abbot.
	Abadéssa, an abbess.
	Abadía, an abbey.
	Canónigo, a canon.
	Deán, a dean.

Prevóste, a provost.	Lección, a lesson.
Archidiácono, an arch-deacon.	Verséte, a verse.
Precentór, a precentor.	Sermón, a sermon.
Maestre de chóro, the master of the choir.	Meditación, meditation.
Cantór, a singing-man.	Oración vocal, vocal prayer.
Sacristán, the vestry keeper.	Oración mental, mental prayer.
Prebendádo, a prebendary.	Predicár, to preach.
Cúra, the parson of a parish.	Hacér el catechísma, to catechize.
Paróchia, a parish.	Entérrar, or } sepultár, to bury.
Vicário, a vicar.	Excommunión, excommunication.
Oficial, an official.	Suspensión, suspension.
Promotór, a proctor.	Entrédicho, an interdict.
Encomiénda, a thing given in commendam.	Irregularidád, irregularity.
Bautísimo, baptism.	Descomulgár, to excommunicate.
Confirmación, confirmation.	Matrimónio, matrimony.
Comulgár, to receive the holy sacrament.	Iglésia cathedral, a cathedral church.
Ordenes sacerdotales, holy orders.	Conventuál, the church of a monastery.
Ceremónia, a ceremony.	Parrochiál, a parish church.
Rúbrica, the rubrick.	Adviénto, the time of advent.
Rituál, a ritual.	Quarésma, the lent.
Oficio divíno, divine service.	Témporas, ember-weeks.
Psaltéria, the psalter.	Vigilia, an eve.
Psáymo, a psalm.	Ayúno, a fast.
Antíphona, an antiphon.	

Things relating to War.

Cosas tocantes a la Guerra.

Artillería, artillery, or great guns.	Cañón, a cannon.
Pieza de artillería, a canon.	Bóca de cañón, the mouth of the gun.
Tren de artillería, the train of artillery.	Fogón, the touch-hole.
	Culáta

Culáta del cañón, <i>the breech</i>	Lanza, <i>a lance.</i>
of the gun.	Alabárda, <i>an halbard.</i>
Carretón de cañón, <i>a car-</i>	Partefána, <i>a partefan.</i>
<i>riage of a great gun.</i>	Pica, <i>a pike.</i>
Cargár, <i>to load.</i>	Alfänge, <i>a cymiter.</i>
Apuntár, <i>to level.</i>	Espáda, <i>a sword.</i>
Disparár, <i>to fire.</i>	Púño de la espáda, <i>the</i>
Tíro de cañón, <i>a canon-</i>	<i>handle of the sword.</i>
<i>shot.</i>	Pomo de la espáda, <i>the</i>
Desmontár un cañón, <i>to</i>	<i>pommel of the sword.</i>
<i>dismount a gun.</i>	Guarnición de espáda, <i>the</i>
Enclavár un cañón, <i>to nail</i>	<i>bilt of the sword.</i>
<i>up a gun.</i>	La hoja, <i>the blade.</i>
Culebrína, <i>a culverin.</i>	Puñal, <i>a poniard.</i>
Falconéte, <i>a falconet.</i>	Bayonéta, <i>a bayonet.</i>
Pedréro, <i>a patterero.</i>	Dága, <i>a dagger.</i>
Cañón entero, <i>a whole</i>	Yelmó, <i>a whole helmet.</i>
<i>cannon.</i>	Celada, <i>the same.</i>
Médio cañón, <i>a half can-</i>	Morrión, <i>a morrion.</i>
<i>nون.</i>	Visera, <i>the vizor of an</i>
Petardo, <i>a petard.</i>	<i>helmet.</i>
Bomba, <i>a bomb.</i>	Gorjál, <i>the gorget.</i>
Mortero, <i>a mortar-piece.</i>	Peto, <i>a breast-plate.</i>
Granáda, <i>a grenade.</i>	Coráza, <i>a cuirass.</i>
Mosquéte, <i>a musket.</i>	Espaldar, <i>the back-plate.</i>
Carabína, <i>a carbine.</i>	Cosseléte, <i>a corset.</i>
Escopéta, <i>a fire-lock.</i>	Braceléte, <i>armour for the</i>
Pistola, <i>a pistol.</i>	<i>arms.</i>
Bala, <i>a bullet.</i>	Escarcelón, <i>armour from</i>
Pólvora, <i>powder.</i>	<i>the waste to the thighs.</i>
Mécha, <i>match.</i>	Grévas, <i>greaves for the</i>
Pedernál, <i>a flint.</i>	<i>thighs.</i>
Flécha, <i>an arrow.</i>	Inojeras, <i>armour for the</i>
Dardo, <i>a dart.</i>	<i>knees.</i>
Javalína, <i>a boar-spear.</i>	Broqué, <i>a buckler.</i>
Hónida, <i>a sling.</i>	Escudo, <i>a shield.</i>
Arco, <i>a bow.</i>	Adárga, <i>a target.</i>
Máza de armas, <i>a battle-</i>	Cota de malla, <i>a coat of</i>
<i>axe.</i>	<i>mail.</i>

General, a general.	Centinela, a sentinel.
Teniente general, a lieu-tenant-general.	Avanguárdia, the vanguard.
Sargento mayor de batalla, a major-general.	Cuérpo de batalla, the main body of the army.
Maestre de campo, or coronel, a colonel.	Retaguárdia, the rear.
Sargento mayor, a major.	Cuérpo de réserva, the corps de reserve.
Capitán, a captain.	Cuérpo de guárdia, the corps de guard.
Teniente, a lieutenant.	Ala, the wing of an army.
Corneta, a cornet.	Batallón, a battalion.
Alférez, an ensign.	Regimiento, or Tercio, a regiment.
Sargento, a serjeant.	Trópa de caballos, a troop of horse.
Cabo de esquadría, a corporal.	Compañía de infantería, a company of foot.
Quadrillero, a brigadier.	Hilera, a rank.
Soldado, a soldier.	Fila, a file.
Caudillo, a leader, or commander.	Esquadrón, a squadron.
Tambor, a drum.	Mochillero, a soldier's boy.
Pifano, a fife.	Bagaje, the baggage.
Trompeta, a trumpet.	Vivandero, a sutler.
Atabál, a kettle drum.	Partida, a party.
Soldado de acaballo, a trooper.	Corredores, the forlorn hope.
Soldado de apié, a foot-soldier.	Batidores, discoverers.
Dragón, a dragoon.	Murallas, or Muros, walls.
Piquero, a pikeman.	Alména, a battlement.
Mosquetero, a musketeer.	Parapeto, the parapet.
Escopetero, a fusilier.	Castillo, a castle.
Infante, a foot soldier.	Fuerte, a fort.
Infantería, the infantry.	Fortaléza, a fortress.
Caballería, the cavalry.	Fortificación, a fortification.
Artillero, a gunner.	Torre, a tower.
Bombardero, a bombardier.	Ciudadela, a citadel.
Ingeniero, an engineer.	Bastión, a bastion.
Minero, a miner.	Cortina,
Castadór, a pioneer.	

Cortina, a curlin.	Contramárcha, a counter-march.
Média luna, an half-moon.	Escaramúza, a skirmish.
Tronéra, a loop-hole.	Batalla, a battle.
Terrapléno, a rampart.	Sitio, a siege.
Caballero, a cavalier, or mount.	Quartel, quarter.
Rebelín, a ravelin.	Encamisada, a camisade, or surprise.
Contraescarpa, the counter-scarp.	Salida, a sally.
Barrera, a barrier.	Batir, to batter.
Falsa brága, a fausse-bray.	Brécha, a breach.
Fosso, the ditch.	Escalada, an escalade.
Repécho, a breast-work.	Affalto, an assault or attack.
Garita, a sentinel's box.	Llamada, the chamaide.
Casemata, a casemate.	Capitulación, a capitulation.
Galería, or } a gallery.	Guarnición, a garrison.
Corredór, }	Tocar la cáxa, to beat the drum.
Estráda cubierta, the covered way.	Levantar gente, to raise men.
Cestón, a gabion.	Pagar el sueldo, to pay the men.
Estáca, a palisade.	Atalaya, a place for discovery, or the person that is to discover.
Reduto, a redoubt.	Batir la estráda, to scour the country.
Mánta, a mantlet, or cover for men from the shot.	Levantar el sitio, to raise the seige.
Fagina, fascines.	Marchar a vanderas desplegadas, to march with flying colours.
Mina, a mine.	Reforzar el exército, to reinforce the army.
Contramina, a countermine.	Tocar a recoger, to sound a retreat.
Trinchera, a trench.	Entregar una plaza, to surrender a place.
El real, the camp.	
Vituallas, provisions.	
Municiones, ammunition.	
Visoño, a fresh water sol-	
dier.	
Picoréro, a marauder.	

The Year, and its Parts.

El Año y sus Pártes.

Año, a year.

Mañana, the morning.

Mes, a month.

Tarde, the evening.

Semana, a week.

Hora, an hour.

Día, a day.

Minuto, a minute.

Nóche, a night.

Momento, a moment.

The Months.

Lós Méses.

Enero, january.

Júlio, july.

Febrero, february.

Agosto, august.

Märzo, march.

Setiembre, september.

Abril, april.

Octubre, october.

Máyo, may.

Noviembre, november.

Júnio, june.

Deciembre, december.

The Days of the Week.

Días de la Semána.

Domingo, sunday.

Juéves, thursday.

Lunes, monday.

Viernes, friday.

Martes, tuesday.

Sábado, saturday.

Miercoles, wednesday.

Navegación.

Navío, or
náve, or
náo,

Navigation.

Fragata, a frigate.

Navío de guerra, a man
of war.

Sáica, a saick.

Navío mercantil, a mer-
chant-ship.

Caráca, a carrack.

Navío ligero, a light ves-
sel for sailing.

Fústa, a foist.

Galéra, a galley.

Pináza, a pinnace.

Galeáza, a galeass.

Bárca de passage, a ferry-

Galeón, a galleon.

boat.

Galeota, a galliot.

Canoa, a canoe.

Piragua, a piragua.

Gondola, a sort of boat so

called.

Esquíte, a skiff.

Barqueta,

Barquéta, or } a boat.	Véla del trinquete, the fore-sail.
Barquilla, } a float.	Véla cevadéra, the sprit-sail.
Bálsa, a float.	Capitána real, the admiral.
Almiránta, the vice-admiral.	Véla latína, a shoulder of mutton sail.
Armáda, a navy of men of war.	Rémo, an oar.
Flota, a fleet of merchants.	Pála de rémo, the blade of the oar.
Esquádra, a squadron.	Troneras, the port-holes.
Abórdo, aboard.	Empavesadas, the nettings.
Pópa, the poop, or stern.	Gallardete, a pendant.
Próa, the prow, or head.	Vandérola, a flag.
Tartána, a tartan.	Vandéra, the colours.
Bergantín, a brigantine.	Brúxula, the compass.
Navío de fuégo, a fireship.	Púnta de la próa, the stern.
Patáche, a patach.	Puente, the deck.
Felúca, a felucca.	Cubiérta, the same.
Bárca, a bark.	Tilla, the hatches.
Bárco, or } a boat.	Bancos de galera, the thwarts of a galley.
Batél, } a boat.	Timón, the helm.
Sentína, the well.	Quilla, the keel.
Lástre, ballast.	Ancora, an anchor.
Mastil, or } the mast.	Amárra, or } a cable.
'Arbol, } the mast.	Maróma,
'Arbol mayór, the main-mast.	Sonda, the sounding lead.
La gábia, the round top.	Piloto, a pilot, or master.
Trinquete, the fore-mast.	Guardián, the boat-swain.
Quilla del árbol, the step of the mast.	Marinero, a sailor.
Enténa, a yard.	Forzádos, or } gally-slaves.
Véla, a sail.	Galeotes,
Véla mayór, the main-sail.	Espaldér, the hindermost rower in a gally.
Véla de gábia, the top-sail.	Vogavante, the fore-man in rowing.
Perroquéte, the top-gallant-sail.	Cómitre, the boat-swain in a gally.
Véla mesana, the mizzen-sail.	

Cossario, or } a pyrate.	ma, a calm.
Piráta,	ento en pópa, the wind
Cámara grande, the great cabbin.	full astern.
Torménta, a tempest.	Coger el viénto, to ply to windward.
Burrásca, a storm.	'Ir a la bollina, to ply and tack upon a wind.
Bonanza, fair weather.	

Algúnas Sençencias, y Refránes Espanoles.

Some Spanish Sentences, and Proverbs.

A Zéite, vino, y amígo, antiguo.

O IL, wine, and a friend,
the older the better.

Aunqué séas prudénte viéjo, no desdéñes el consejo.

Though you be a discreet old man, do not disdain to be advised.

Aunqué compuésta la mentera, siémpres es vencida.

A lye though never so well disguised, is always worsted.

Aunqué vistáis à la móna de seda, móna se quédá.

Though you cloath a monkey in silk, it is still a monkey.

A Asho de' muchos, lóbos cómen.

An ass that has many masters is devour'd by the wolves; that is, every bodies busines is no bodies business.

A río rebuélto, ganáncia de pescadóres.

It is best fishing in troubled waters.

Aquella es bien casada, que ni tiéne suégra, ni cuñáda.

She is well marry'd, who has neither mother, nor sister in law.

A quién dices tu puridád, a éste das tu libertad.

When you entrust one with your secret, you give up your liberty.

Aquellos son ricos, que tiénen amigos.

They are rich who have friends.

A quién

A quién no le sobra el pan
ne críe can. *He that has not bread to share, must not keep a dog.*

A quién dan, no escóge. *Beggars must not be choosers.*

A pádre guardadór, hijo A niggardly father has a prodigal son.

Cada ovéja, con su paréja. *All should match with their equals.*

!Ande yó caliente, y ríase So I keep myself warm, no matter if people laugh at la gente.

!Antes que te cáses, míra Mind what you do before lo que haces. *you marry; that is, look before you leap.*

Amigo del buén tiempo, A fair weather friend, turns mudase con el viénto. *with the wind.*

Amigo quebrádo, aunque Friendship that has been soldado, nunca es sano. *broken, may be patch'd up, but will never be found.*

Amigo de úno, enemigo Be a friend but to one, and de ningúno. *an enemy to none.*

A lo que puédes sólo, no When you can do a thing espéres a ótro. *yourself, do not wait for another.*

Al desdichádo, poco le vale If a man is unfortunate, it avails him little to be brave. esforzádo.

Allégate a los buénos, y Keep good company, and you serás úno déllos. *will be one of them.*

Al hómbre osado, la fortuna le da la mano. Fortune favours the bold.

Al buén varón, tiérras A good man reckons all ajénas patria le son. *countries his own.*

Al agradecido, mas de lo Give a grateful man more pedido. *than he asks.*

Al villano dadle el pie, Give a clown an inch, and tomaráse la mano. *he will take an ell.*

Al que da el capón, dále If one gives you a capon, give la piérna, y el alón. *him the leg, and the wing.*

Al que tiene mugér hermosa, ó castillo en frontéra, He that has a beautiful wife, or a castle on the frontier,

frontéra, ó viña en ca
réra, nunca le falta
guerra. *a vineyard upon the
road, is never without
quarrels.*

A caballo dñdo, no le Do not look a gift horse in
miren el diénte. the mouth.

Burlaos con el ásno, daros Play with an ass, and he'll
ha en la bárba con el slap you on the face with
rábo. his tail. No jesting with
fools.

Buén principio, la mitad A good beginning is half the
es hécha. work done.

Bocado de mal pan, ni lo Do not eat a morsel of bad
cómás, ni lo des a tu bread, nor give it to your
can.

Bocado comido, no gána What is eaten gains no friend.
amigo. Past favours forgotten.

Bien áma, quién nunca That's a true lover, that
olvída. never forgets.

Bien sabe el sábio que no A wise man is sensible of his
sábe, el necio piénsa ignorance, a fool thinks
que sábe.

Déstia que ánda llano, para I would have a beast that
mi me la quiere no pára carries easy for myself, not
mí hermáno. for my brother; every one
loves the best for himself.

Cría cuérvo, y facárte ha Breed up a crow, and he'll
el ójo. pull out your eyes.

Con latín, rocín, y florín Latin, a nag, and money
andarás el mundo. will carry you through
the world.

Cóbra buena fama, y Get a good name, and you
échate en la cama. may lye abed.

Cortesía de boca mucho Good words are worth much,
vále, y poco cuésta. and cost little.

Cantarillo que muchas vê- The pitcher that goes often
ces va à la fuente, ó to the well, comes home
déxa la ása, o la frénte. broke at last.

Cada gallo cánta en su Every cock can crow on his
muladar. own dunghil.

Cánta la rána, y no tiene pelo, ni lana. *frog sings, and yet has neither hair, nor wooll.*
The poorest people are merry.

Casa labrada, y viña plantada. *A house ready built, and a vineyard ready planted,*
i. e. they are best to buy.

Dó éntre el bebér, salé el sabér. *When the wine is in, the wit is out.*

Por dónde fuéres, hág como viéres. *When you are at Rome, do as they do at Rome.*

Dó fálta dícha, por demás es diligéncia. *Industry avails little without fortune.*

Do fuérza viéne, derécho se piérde. *Might overcomes right.*

Dícen que éres buéno, méte la mano en tu seno. *They say you are a good man, but put your hand into your bosom; that is, consult your own conscience.*

Dolór de espóso, dolór de códo, duele mucho, y dura poco. *A husband's sorrow is like a pain in the elbow, very sharp, but soon over.*

De amigo reconciliado, guárdate del cómo del diablo. *Never trust a reconciled friend any more than you would the devil.*

Del agua mánsa me guárde diós, que de la bráva yo me sabré guardár. *God deliver me from a still water, for I will deliver myself from that which is rough; alluding to the tempers of people.*

De luéngas viás, luéngas mentíras. *Long travels produce great lies.*

De un hómbre nécio, à veces bién consejo. *A fool sometimes gives good advice.*

Después de descalobrádo, untár el cásco. *To break a man's head, and then give him a plastron.*

Del lópo, porráda, ó mala palábra. *From a madman you may expect a blow, or ill language.*

Mas

Mas vale un tóma, que *A bird in hand, is worth two in the bush.*

Después de beber, cada *When people have drunk,*
uno dice su parecer. *they are open hearted.*

Después de comér, dor- *After dinner sleep a while,*
mir; después de cenár, *after supper walk a mile.*
pássos mil.

Debáxo de buén fayo, está *A good coat often covers a wicked fellow.*

De quién pónे los ójos en el suélo, no fies tu di- *Do not trust a man that looks on the ground with your money: that is, an hypocrite.*

Guárdate, de hómbre que no hábla, y de can que no ládra. *Take heed of a man that does not talk, and of a dog that does not bark.*

Echár el mángó trás el de- *To throw the belve after the hatchet.*

'Echate a enfermár, y sa- brás quién te quiere bien, y quién mal. *Take your bed, as if you were sick, and you will know who does, and who does not love you.*

El dar limóspa, nunca méngua la bólfa. *Giving alms never lessens the stock.*

El perezoso si émpre es menesteroso. *A sloathful man is always needy.*

El avariénto rico, no tiéne pariénte ni amígo. *A covetous rich man has neither relations, nor friends.*

El bóbo si es calládo, por sesúso es reputádo. *A fool that says little passes for a wise man.*

El que tiéne tejádos de vi- drio, no tire piedras al de su vezino. *He whose house is covered with glass, must not throw stones at his neighbours.*

El huésped, y el péce, a tres días, hiéde. *A guest and fish stinks when kept three days.*

El harto del ayúno, no tiéne duélo algúno. *He that is full, has no compassion on him that is fasting.*

- El dar es honor, y el pe- *It is an honour to give, and*
 dir dolor. *a trouble to ask.*
- El hombre es el fuego, la *Man is fire, and woman is*
 muger la estopa, viene *tow, the devil comes and*
 el diablo y sopla. *blows.*
- El viejo en su tierra, y el *An old man in his own, and a*
 mozo en la ajena, mi- *young man in another coun-*
 enten de una manera. *try, are both lyars alike.*
- El lobo harto se mete *When the devil was sick, the*
 fraile. *devil a monk would be ;*
when the devil was well,
the devil a monk was he.
- En tal signo naci, que *I was born under such a*
 quiero mas para mi que *planet, that I have more*
 para ti. *kindness for my self than*
for you.
- En casa llena presto se *When the house is full, the*
 guisa la cena. *supper is soon dress'd.*
- Fortuna, y aceituna, a *Fortune, and olives some-*
 veces, mucha, a veces *times come in a glut, and*
 ninguna. *sometimes none at all.*
- Gato escaldado, ~~dalagua~~ *The burnt child dreads the*
 fria ha miedo. *fire.*
- Humo, y gatera, y mu- *A smoaky house, the rain*
 ger parlera, echan el *coming in, and a scolding*
 hombre de su casa fu- *wife, turn a man out of*
 era. *doors.*
- Hijo malo, mas vale do- *A wicked son is better sick*
 liente que sano. *than in health.*
- Juras del que ama muger, *The oaths of one that loves*
 no se han de creer. *a woman are not to be*
regarded.
- Los ninos de pequenos, *Children must be chastised*
 que no hai castigo de- *when they are little, for*
 spues para ellos. *it is afterwards too late.*
- Lo que los ojos no ven, *What the eye does not see,*
 corazon no desfea. *the heart does not rue.*
- Los yerros del medico, *The earth hidesthe mistakes*
 la tierra los cultre. *of physicians.*

Lo que no quierés pára ti, *Do as you would be done by.*
no lo quieras pára mi.

La oración breve súbe al *A short prayer reaches heaven.*

La traición apláce, mas *We love the treason, but not the traitor.*
no el que la hace.

La mugér compuésta à su marido quita de puerta ajena. *A wise well dressed keeps her husband from running to other women.*

La viuda rica, con un ojo llora, y con el otro re-píca. *A rich widow weeps with one eye, and laughs with the other.*

La mugér, y el vino, sa-can al hombre de tino. *Women and wine, make a man mad.*

Múla, que hace hin, y mu-gér que parla latín, nunca hicieron buén fin. *A mule that kicks, and a woman that speaks latin, never come to a good end.*

Mujér, viento, y ventura-rida. *Women, wind, and fortune, are given to change.*

Múla a raposa, pe-ro mas el que la toma. *The fox is very cunning, but he is more cunning that catches her.*

Mugér placéra, de todos díce, y todos délla. *A gossiping woman talks of all people, and all of her.*

Múcho sabía el cornudo, pero mas el que se los puso. *The cuckold was very subtle, but he was more crafty than cuckolded him..*

Mete el ruin en tu pajár, y querérte há heredár. *Let a scoundrel into your barn, and he will contrive to be your heir.*

Mas vale favér, que ju-sticia, ni razón. *Favour goes farther than justice and reason.*

Mas vale pedír, y men-digár, que en la hórca perheár. *It is better to ask and beg, than to swing on the gallows.*

Mal me quieren mis com-mádres, porque digo las verdádes. *My gossips bear me ill will, because I speak the truth.*

- Mas vale guardár, que *It is better to be sparing,*
demandár, *than to beg.*
- Mas vale mala avenéncia, *A bad composition is better*
que buena senténcia. *than a favourable judgment.*
- Mas sabe el lóco en su casa, que el cuérdo en la ajéna. *A mad man knows his own business better than a wise man does another's.*
- Mas vale a quién diós ayuda, que el que mucho madrúga. *He thrives better who has God's blessing, than he that rises early.*
- Núnca espéres, que haga tu amigo lo quo tu pudieres. *Never expect your friend to do that which you can do yourself.*
- No es náda, siñó que matan a mi marido. *The matter is not much but that they are killing my husband.*
- No hái mejor maestra, que necesidad y pobréza. *There is no better teacher than necessity.*
- No hái mal tan lastimero, como no tener dinéro. *No calamity so ours, as to be without money.*
- No hái mejor bocádo, que el hurtádo. *No bit so sweet as that which is stolen.*
- No hái peor sordo, que el que no quiere oír. *None so deaf as he that will not hear.*
- Niña, víña, peral, y habár, malos son de guardár. *A girl, a vineydrd, a garden of peas, and a field of beans, are hard to be kept.*
- Ni por casa, ni por víña, no tomes mugér ximja. *Do not for the sake of an house, or of a vineyard take a monkey wife; that is, deformed.*
- No hái sábado sin sol, ni viéjo sin dolor, ni moçita sin arreból. *There is no saturday without some sunshine, nor an old man without an ailing, nor a young wench without a charm.*

Ni de estópa, buéna ca- There is no having a good
mísa; ni de púta, bu- skirt of tow, nor a good
éna amiga. friend of a whore.

Ni caválgues en pótro, ni Do not ride upon a colt, nor
tu mugér alábes a ótro. praise your wife to another man.

Ni firmes carta que no Never sign any writing without
Léas, ni bébas agua que reading, nor drink water without looking into it.
no véas.

Ni à rico débas, ni à pob- Never owe money to a rich
bre prométas. man, nor promise any thing to a poor one.

Nécios, y porfiados hácen Fools, and obstinate people
rícōs los letrádos. enrich lawyers.

Ovéja que bála, bocádo The sheep that bleats loses
piérde. a mouthful.

Oír, ver, y callár, récias It is very hard to hear, see,
cas son de obrár. and say nothing.

en tempéro. Whatsoever the weather is,
camino real do not leave the highway
P. indéro. to follow the path.

Por hacér placér al suéño, Through indulging of sleep,
ni sáya, ni camisa téngo. I have neither petticoat,
nor smock.

Por mucho madrugár, no Rising early makes it not
amanéce más aína. day the sooner.

Poco, y en paz, mucho A little in peace is much to
se me haz. me.

Por el hilo, sacarás el o- You will find the clue by the
villo; y por lo passado, thread, and what is to
lo no venido. come by what is past.

Por dinéro, báila el pér- The dog dances for money;
ro. money makes the mare to go.

Pos ser Réy, se quiébra All justice is broke to gain a
tóda léy. crown.

Pléito, y orinál, llévan el Lawyers and physicians send
hombre al hospitál. a man to the hospital.

Piénsa el ladrón, que tódos The thief thinks all men like
se de su condición. him.

Pescadór de vára, mas có- An angler eats more than he
me que gána. gets.

Peléan los ladrónes, descú- When thieves fall out, honest
brense los húrtos. men come by their goods.

Pérro ladradór, nunca A barking dog never bites.
buén mordedór.

Pára amór, ni muérte, no No house is strong enough to
hái casa fuérte. keep out love and death.

Páños lúcen en palácio, Fine cloaths are regarded at
que no hijos dálgo. court, and not gentility.

Palábras de santo, y úñas To talk like a saint, and claw
de gáato. like a cat.

Pága lo que débes, sabrás Pay your debts, and you'll
lo que tiénes. know what you are worth.

Panadéra éras ántes, y Formerly you was a baker,
aora tráhes guántes. and now you wear

Quién à tódos crée, yér He who believ-
ra; quién à ningúno, in the wrong bo
no acíerta. believes none is st in the
right.

Quién no álza un alfilér, He that will not take up a
no estíma à su mugér. pin, does not value his wife.

Quién fía, ò prométe, en He that is bound for ano-
déuda se méte. ther, or makes a promise,
contracts a debt.

Quién dá lo suyo ántes de He who gives away what
morir, aparéjase à bien he has before he dies, must
sufrir. prepare to endure much.

Quién há criádos, há ene- He who has servants, has
migos no escusádos. unavoidable enemies.

Quién no tuviére que ha- He who wants something to
cer, árme navío, ò tóme do, may fit out a ship, or
mugér. marry a wife.

Quién poco tiéne, y éfso He who has little, and gives
dá, préstó se arrepentirá. it away, will soon repent.

Quién à la rapósa há de He that will deceive the fox
engañar, cuy nplele ma- must rise before him.

Quién

Quién tiene quatro, y gasta He who gets four, and
cincos, no ha menestér spends five, has no need
bolsíco.

Quién ruín es en su tierra, He that is base in his own
ruín es en la ajena. country, is so in another.

Quién lo fío áma, her- He who loves that which is
moso le paréce. deformed, fancies it hand-
some.

Quién á su pérro quiére He that will kill his dog
matár, rábia le há de must say he is mad.
levantár.

Quién come lu váca del He who eats the king's cow,
Réy, à cién años paga pays for the bones an
los huéssos. hundred years after.

Quién te hácet la fiesta, He that gives you a treat,
que no te suéle hácer, ó and did not use to do it,
te quiére engañar, ó te either designs to deceive,
há menestér. or stands in need of you.

Quién de lu ésto deter- He that resolves in haste,
mín de espacio se ar- repents at leisure.

Quién lénqua há, à Róma He who has languages may
vá. travel to Rome.

Quién bién quiére à Bel- Love me, and love my dog:
tran, bién quiére à lu can.

Quién al ciélo escúpe, en He that spits at heaven, has
la cara le cár. it fall in his face.

Quién léxos se vá à casár, He who goes far to be mar-
ó vá engañado, ó vá à ried, either is deceived,
engañoar. or goes to deceive.

Quién siembra en el ca- He that sows in the big-
míno, cánsa los buéyes ways, tires his oxen, and
y pierde el trigo. loses his corn.

Quieres que te síga el can, If you would have the dog
dále pan.

Quién si casá por amores, They that marry for love,
málde días, y buénas have bad days, and good
noches.

Quién

Quién pobreza tién, de *He that is poor is despised by*
 sus déudos es desdén; *bis kindred, and be that is*
y el rico sin sérlo, de rich is a kin to every body,
todos es déudo. *though be be not.*

Quándo el costário pro- *When the pyrate makes vows*
 mété missas, y céra, *to heaven, his vessel is in*
con mal ánda la galéra. *a bad pligh.*

Quándo el hiérro está en- *You must strike whilst the*
cendido, entonces há de iron is hot.

Quándo el villáno está en *Set a beggar a horse-back,*
el mulo, no conóce à and he will ride to the
diós, ni al mundo. *devil.*

Quándo el hómbre méa *When a man bepisces his*
las bótas, no es buéno boots, he is not fit for
para las mózas. *young women.*

Quándo el diáblo réza, *When the fox preaches, take*
engañarte quíere. *heed of the geese.*

Quál el dueño, tal el pérro. *Like master, like man.*

Riñen las commádres, des- *When gossips quarrel, the*
cúbrense las verdádes. *truth comes out.*

Ratón que no sábe mas de *The cat soon catches the*
un horádo, présto le mouse that knows but one
cóge el gáto. *hole.*

Súfre por fabér, y trabája *Have patience to learn, and*
por tenér. *take pains to be rich.*

Si tenéis la cabéza de ví- *If you have a glass bead,*
 drio, no os toméis à *do not pretend to throw*
pedrádas conmigo. *stones at me.*

Síentate en tu lugár, no *Sit in your own place, and*
 te harán levantár. *you will not be forced to*
rise.

Si el nécio no fuésse al *If fools did not go to market,*
 mercádo, no se vende- *that which is nought would*
 ría lo málo. *not be sold.*

Si quiéres aprendér à orár, *If you would learn to pray,*
 éntre en la mar. *go to sea.*

Si te dá el pób're, es pór- *If a poor man gives, it is in*
 que mas tóm'e. *hopes to receive more.*

Si

Si quiéres vivir sano, házte If you would be healthy, be
viéjo tempráno. old betimes.

Sé mózo bién mandádo, Be a diligent servant, and you
y comerás con tu amo. will eat with your master.

Salió del lodo, y entró en He leaped out of the frying-
el arróyo. pan into the fire.

Tópanse los hombres, y Men meet, but mountains
no los móntes. do not.

Tódos los duélos, con pan Fat sorrows are better than
son ménos. lean.

Una golondrina no hácet One swallow makes no sum-
veráno. mer.

Viéjo amadór, inviérno An amorous old man is like
con flór. flowers in winter.

Vendér miél al colmené. To sell honey to him that
ro. keeps hives; that is, to
carry coals to Newcastle.

Vinse los amóres, y qué- Love goes off, but the sting
day los d' amores. of it remains.

Van los ratos, y estién- When the cat's away, the
dense los ratos. mice play.

Yérba mala, no la empéce The frost does not binder the
la heláda. growth of weeds; that is,
ill weeds grow apace.

Yantár tarde, y cenár cé- A late dinner, and an early
do, sacan la merienda supper, save an after-
de en medio. noon's luncheon.

Zorrilla que mucho tarda, The fox that stays out long,
caza aguárda. waits for a prey.

Zorrilla tagarnilléra, há- The subtle fox counterfeits
cese muéfta por asir being dead, to lay hold of
préfa. the prey.

Por dó salta la cabra, sal- Where the goat leaps, the
ta la que la máma. kid follows; that is, cat
after kind.



Nómbres proprios de Hómbres y Mugéres.
Proper Names of Men and Women.

A Mbrósio, <i>Ambrose.</i>	Fernández, <i>Ferdinand.</i>
Andrés, <i>Andrew.</i>	Juán, <i>John.</i>
Augustín, <i>Augustin.</i>	Lorénzo, <i>Lawrence.</i>
Bartholomé, <i>Bartholomew.</i>	Luís, <i>Lewis.</i>
Benito, <i>Benedict.</i>	Lúcas, <i>Luke.</i>
Bernardo, <i>Bernard.</i>	Lucía, <i>Lucy.</i>
Catarina, <i>Catherine.</i>	Márcos, <i>Mark.</i>
Cecilia, <i>Cecily.</i>	Martín, <i>Martin.</i>
Susana, <i>Susan.</i>	Mathías, <i>Matthias.</i>
Chrisóstomo, <i>Chrysostom.</i>	Nicolás, <i>Nicholas.</i>
Christóval, <i>Christopher.</i>	Páblo, <i>Paul.</i>
Cárolo, <i>Charles.</i>	Philípe, <i>Philip.</i>
Domingo, <i>Dominick.</i>	Margarita, <i>Margaret.</i>
Estévan, <i>Stephen.</i>	Sebastián, <i>Sebastian.</i>
Francisco, <i>Francis.</i>	Simón, <i>Simon.</i>
Guillermo, <i>William.</i>	Thomás, <i>Thomas.</i>
Jerónimo, <i>Jerome.</i>	Isabel, <i>Elizabeth.</i>
Jorge, <i>George.</i>	Maria, <i>Mary.</i>
Diégo, <i>James.</i>	Ana, <i>Anne.</i>
Henrique, <i>Henry.</i>	Joséph, <i>Joseph.</i>

Vérbos tocantes á las Persónas de Hómbres, y
Mugéres.

Verbs relating to the Persons of Men and Wo-
mén.

Andár, <i>to go.</i>
Corré, <i>to run.</i>
Saltár, <i>to leap.</i>
Danzár, <i>to dance.</i>
báilar, } <i>to dance.</i>

Comér, <i>to eat.</i>
Bebér, <i>to drink.</i>
Hartáse, <i>to gorge.</i>
Ayunár, <i>to fast.</i>
Chupár, <i>to suck.</i>
Mastár,

Mascár, to chew.	Jugár, to play.
Tragár, to swallow.	Trabajár, to work.
Rascár, to scratch.	Escribir, to write.
Espulgár, to pick fleas.	Holgár, to be idle.
Acostársese, to go to bed.	Leér, to read.
Dormir, to sleep.	Despertár, to awake.
Levantárse, to rise.	Huir, to run away.
Vestírsese, to put on one's cloaths.	Braveár, to boast.
Tocárse, a woman to dress her head.	Alabár, to praise.
Hacérse la bárba, to trim.	Despreciár, to despise.
Bostezár, to yaun.	Soltár, to let go.
Velár, to wacth.	Abrazár, to embrace.
Calzársese los zapátos, to put on shooes.	Atacár, to lace.
Calzársese las médias, to put on stockings.	Abotonár, to button.
Enfermár, to grow sick.	Ilamár, to call.
Curár, to cure.	Rezár, to pray.
Herír, to wound.	Predicár, to preach.
Matár, to kill.	Qbedecér, to obey.
Emborrachár, } to make drunk.	Mandár, to command.
embeodár, } drunk.	Gobernár, to govern.
	Parír, to bring forth.
	Bezár, to kiss.
	Hacér testimonio, to make a will.

Phrases Familiáres.

Familiar Phrases.

Tengo mucho sueño, Despertad, Awake.
I am very sleepy. Dormís demasiado, You sleep too much.
 Dejádmel dormir, Let me sleep.
 Levantáos pronto, Rise quickly.
 Dormís? Are you asleep?
 Estás en la cama? Porqué no os dais priesa?
 —Are you in bed still? Why do you not make haste?
 Estás

Estáis levantado? Are you Queréis salsa? Will you
up? have sauce?

Cuidado no os resfriéis, Con sal me contento, I
Take care you do not get cold am satisfied with salt.
Porqué no coméis? Why

Vestios, Put on your cloaths. do you not eat ?

Lavad las manos, *Wash* Aquí está la pechuga de
your hands. una póllea, *Here is the*

Peinád la cabéza, Comb wing of a pullet.
your head No coméis para. Don't

Atacádme, Late me. No comes pain! Don't you eat bread?

Ayudáme, Help me. Queréis beber? Pedidlo.
Calzadme. Put on my shoes Will you drink? Call

*Hawaiian. Hawaiian. Bid me a haoe do da qué
and stockings. for it.*

*Have I rezado? Have you Dadine, un bocado de que-
said your prayers? So, Give me a bit of*

Adónde están mis horas? cheese.
Where is my prayer-book? No hái fruta? Is there no

Queréis almorcázar? Will fruit? *quiéreis* *almorcázar?*

Decídme lo que queréis, *off the table-cloth.*

*Tell me what you will have. Juguemos à los naipes,
!Unos huevos. Some eggs. Let us play at cards.*

Una xícara de chocolate, Mas vale irnos al jardín.

We had better go into the garden.

Háce mucho frío, y nos
podrémos acatarrar, *I*

No téngo servilleta, ni
down to table. is very cold, and we may
get a cold.

cuchillo, ni tenedor. Hace calor y no es sano el
I have no napkin, nor andar à medio dia, The
knife, nor fork. weather is hot, and it is
Esta ólla está bien gui- not wholesome to walk
sada. This soup is very noon.

~~No~~ Que 'émonos pues aquí
No cón o carne górdia, I Then let us stay here.

eat no fat meat. Durmamos ~~hasta la~~
us take an afternoon's nap. Aquí

Aquí viéne fuláno, *Here comes such a one.*

Rogadle que éntre, *Desire him to come in.*

Que nuévas tráhe v. md, *What news do you bring.*

No hái cóla de nuévo, *There is nothing new.*

Cíerto que hái muchas no-
vedádes, *Indeed there is much news.*

Contádnos algúna cosa, *Tell us something.*

Dícen que el cónde de N.
se há casado, *They say the earl of N. is married.*

Que se cásé, ó se déxe de
casar, que nos importa? *Whether he marries or marries not, what does it concern us?*

Hái aviso que el duque de
N. se ha muerto, *There is advice that the duke of N. is dead.*

Mas quiéro que se muerán
féis díques, que morí-
me yó, *I had rather six dukes should die than die myself.*

Si no hícéis caso de mis
nuéyas, que queréis que
os diga? *If you do not regard my news, what would you have me say?*

éste, ~ nárse el
~, que cáda
, y la repub-

lica pôco gána, ó piérde en éllo, *For one man to die and another to be married is what happens every day, and the publick neither gains nor loses much by it.*

Múchos son de parecer
que havrá guérra, *Many are of opinion that there will be a war.*

Otros porfian que ha de
havér paz, *Others affirm there will be peace.*

Los cosserios de Argél há-
cen mucho dáño, *The Algier rovers do much mischief.*

Pués los de Tunes y Tripólí
no están ociósos, *Those of Tunis and Tripoli are not idle.*

Conocéis aquélla dama?
Do you know that lady?

Bién la conósco, es mí
hermosa, *I know her very well, she is a great beauty.*

Mí modesta, y mí
discreta, *Very modest, and very discreet.*

Tiéne gran dóte, *She has a great portion.*

Su madre siémpre la acom-
páña, *Her mother is always with her.*

La hija es mí obediente,
The daughter is very obedient.

- Y la madre bien lo merece, *And the mother deserves it.* Que nos importa, *What is that to us.*
- Pues su hijo es bizarró caballero, *Then her son is a fine gentleman.* Vámos á la plaza, *Let us go to the square.*
- Ha servido con reputación en la guerra, *He has served in the war with reputation.* Que harémos allá? *What shall we do there?*
- Además, es hombre de letras, *Besides he is a man of learning.* Son las quatro, *Four a clock.*
- Muy cortés, *Very courteous.* No puéde ser, *It cannot be.*
- Nada fanfarrón, *Nothing given to boasting.* Por mi relóx así es, *It is so by my watch.*
- Por su valór ha medrado, *He has been preferred for his valour.* Por el sol no falta un cuarto, *It does not want a quarter by the sun.*
- Es Coronel de un tercio, *He is colonel of a regiment.* Aún es temprano para salir de casa, *It is too early to go abroad yet.*
- Véis aquél que pasa? *Do you see him that goes by?* Mas vale andar de día, *It is better to walk by day than by night.*
- Quién es? *Who is he?* De noche todos los gatos son pardos, *At night all cats are gray.*
- Es todo lo contrario del otro, *He is just the reverse of the other.* Múchos robos se cometen de noche, *Many robberies are committed at night.*
- Cómo así? *How so?* Siéndolo tantos, quién se há de atrevér? *Being many, who will dare attempt us?*
- Es un miserable, *He is a wretched fellow.* La noche es muy fría, *It is very cold at night.*
- Cobárde en estrémo, *A great coward.* Hagáme bien, *Let us make things well.*
- Sumamente ignorante, *Very ignorant.*
- Desvergonzado, *Impudent.*
- Echador de bravatas, *Allways bullying.*

Trahéd carbón, Bring coals. Lástima es que se imprí-
Echád léña, Lay on wood. man tales disparates, It
Cerrád éssa puerta, Shut is pity that such fopperies
that door. should be printed.

Leámos un rátó, Let us La emprén a hace mucho
read a while. bien, y mucho mal,
Que libros son éstos? Printing does much good,
What books are these? and much harm.

Tódos son de entreteni- Adónde hái buén gobiér-
miento, They are all of no no debiéra hacer mal,
diversion. Where the government is
good it should do no harm.

No gústo de novélas, I do Adónde se halla éste buen
not like novels. gobierno? Where is that
Ahí hái Comedias, There good government to be
are plays. found?

Si son buénas se puéden En tódas partes hái su lé-
leér, If they are good gua de mal camino,
they may be read. There is something amiss
Son de los mejóres poétas, every where.

They are writ by the Mejór es história, History
best poets. is better.

Pués que os paréce de No hái cosa perfecta en
viages? What do you éste mundo, Nothing is
think of voyages? perfect in this world.

Nos dan a conocer todo Dexémonos de cuéntos, y
el mundo, sin salír de no jusguemos, Let us
nuestra patria, They leave off stories, and not
ake us acquainted with 'l the world, without judge.

Merendémos, Let's eat
ces nos llénan la ca- our afternoon's luncheon.
cza de mentíras, Some- 'Eso es de niños, That is
nes they fill our beds like children.

Mózoz sómos, comámos
miéntras podémos, We
are young, let's eat
whilst we can.

Passeémonos un rátó, Let
us walk a little.

El aire es templado, The
air is temperate.

Olvámos

Y.

Volvámos à la ciudád, Y sobre todo la señóra,
Let us return to the city. And the lady above all.

Linda cálle es ésta, This Mui obligáda les estói, I
is a fine street. am much obliged to you.

Las tiéndas son hermósas, Adónde hái mérito, no
The shops are beautiful. hái obligación, Where

Mirad la pompa de aquel tendéro, See how stately
that shop-keeper is. there is merit, there is no obligation.

Bién soberbios son muchos, Many are very proud.
Esso fuéra injusticia, That would be unjust.

En teniendo dinéro se ensanchan, When they have got money they grow haughty.
Comprad lo que se vende, Buy what is to be sold.

Aquella tendéra paréce una condesa, That female shop keeper, looks like a countess.
Mas quisiera la señóra que

tóda la tiénda, I would rather have the mistress than all the shop.

Comprémos algúna cosa, Let us buy something.
Mi marido no me vende My husband will not sell me.

Que gústan vuéstras mercedes? What will you please to have?
Ni el querrá deshacerse de tal alaja, ni hái precio que la compré, Neither will he part with such a jewel, nor will any money purchase it.

Una tabaquera curiosa, A curious snuff box.
Tixeras de Fráncia, French scizars.

Aquí viene mi suj Here comes my boy

Hevillas de las mejoras, Some of the best buckles.
Dichoso es el, He happy man.

Aquí náda falta, Here is no want of any thing.
Havéis mostrado a señores lo que les dá? Have you these gentlemen wh

Vuestras mercedes véan lo que les agráda, Gentlemen, see what pleases you.
ike?

Todos nos paréce bien, We like all.

- Tódo aquí nos conténta, De mirár un demónio,
All here pleases us. despúes de haver visto
'Esso es lo que deseo, That un Angel, *To look upon*
is what I wish. a devil after having seen
Muí venturoso sóis, You Tan fea como es, presume
• art very fortunate. de si, *As ugly as she*
No me puédo quexár de mi suerte, I cannot com- is, *she has a conceit of*
plain of my lot. *herself.*
- Diós os guárde, God keep Passémos, que no puédo
you. tolerárla, *Let us pass by,*
El mismo váya con vue- for *I cannot endure her.*
stras mercédes, God go El Rey viéne, Diós le
with you. guárde, *The king is com-*
Acá volverémos por lo ing, *God bless him.*
que se ofreциe, We Parémonos aquí, *Let us*
shall return bither for stand here.
Serán servídos con tóda Quién viéne en el cóche
estimación, You shall be con su magestad? *Who*
served with all respect. *is in the coach with his*
Havéis visto mas bélла La Reyna nuestra señora
criatúra? Did you ever soberána, *Our sovereign*
see a more charming lady the queen.
creature?
Paréce que os há enamorado, You seem to be in Los otros dos personáges,
love with her. The other two great per-
sonas.
Mi amor es casto, My El caballérizo mayór,
is chaste. The master of the horse.
Lu preséncia lo meréce, Y el gran tesorero, And
Her presence deserves it. the high treasurer.
Aquitienéis ótro estrémo, En el primér cóche quien
Here you have the con- hái? Who is in the first
trary extreme. coach?
Diós nos libre, God eli- Los gentiles hombres,
var us. The gentlemen ushers.
De que os asustáis? What Las libreras son mui ricas,
are you frightened at? The liveries are very
rich.

- Las guárdas^o son vistósas, No señalan los tributos? *The guards are a very fine sight.* *Do not they set the Taxes?*
- Adónde va su magestád? También esso les tóca, *Whither is his majesty going?* *That also belongs to them.*
- A la comédia, *To the play.* No lo rehúsan a veces? *Do not they refuse it sometimes.*
- Pues lo sabéis, decidme al- Los Españóies son mui-
go de la corte, *Since you know it, tell me some-*
thing of the court. *leales, The Spaniards are very loyal.*
- Las córtes tódas se paré- No respondéis à mi pre-
cen, *All courts resemble one another.* *gúncta, You do not answer my question.*
- Peró el gobierno de Espá- Paréceme que si, *I think I*
ña cómo es? *But how is the government of Spain?* *do.*
- El Réy es absoluto, *The king is absolute.* Cómo así? *How so?*
- Que son las Córtes? *What are the Cortes?* Porque siendo tan leales,
Los procuradóres del Réi- le dan à su Rey lo que
no, *The representatives of the kingdom.* pide, *Because being so*
loyal, they give the king what he asks.
- Tíenens poder sobre el Y el Réy no pide mas de
Réy? *Have they any power above the king?* lo que há menester,
And the king asks no more than he wants.
- El Réy de España no co- ~~Dichoso Réy, y dichosa gente, an happy king, and an happy people.~~
- nóce superior, *The king of Spain owns no superior.* Contádmel las grandezas de España, *what relates to the grandeur of Spain.*
- De que sirven las Córtes? Hái en España dode Réi-
What is the use of the Cortes? nos, ó provincias grandes, *There are in Spain twelve kingdoms, or large provinces.*
- De representar las necef- Quálos
- sidádes del Réino, *To represent the wants of the kingdom.*

Quáles son? Which are they?

Castilla, (Castile,) Leon, Aragón, Navarra, (Navarre) Cataluña (Catalonia) Galicia, Valéncia, Murcia, Biscaya, (Biscay) Granada, Andaluzía, Estremadura.

Estas contienen diez y seis mil, y setecientas villas, These contain 16700 towns.

Once Arzobispados, 11 archbishopricks.

Quarénta y ócho Opispados, 48 bishopricks.

Quince Universidádes, 15 universities.

Les réntas reáles mōstan tréinta millones de ducados, The king's revenue amounts to 30 millions of ducats.

La rénta de los susodichos arzobispados, opispados, dos millones ducats. The revenues aforesaid archbishopricks and bishopricks two millions of ducats.

rebéndas, paróchias, otros benefícios otro tanto, The prebends, parishes, and other benefits are much more.

véntos se cuéntan mas de nueve mil, The mo-

nasteries are reckoned to be above 9000.

Las persónas religiosas setenta mil. The religious persons 70000.

Las haziendas de los Duques que son Grandes de Espáña se estiman en un millón nuevecientos y novénta mil ducados, The estates of the dukes that are Grandees 1990000 ducats.

Las de los Marquéses Grandes trecientos y cinquenta mil, Those of the marquesses Grandees at 350000.

Las de los Condes Grandes trecientos y cinquenta mil, Those of the earls, Grandees 350000.

Las de los Dúques, Marquéses, y Cóndes, que no son Grandes, tres millones ciento y cinquenta mil, Those of the dukes, marquesses, and earls who are not Grandees three millions 150000.

Todo ésto en Espáña, All this in Spain.

Los dominios de las Indias son immensos, The dominions in the Indies are immense.

Su thesóro enriquece à todo el mundo, Its treasures enrich all the world.

Recojámonos pára tratárdessas cósas, que gusto mucho déllas, Let us

go home to talk of these affairs, for I am much delighted with them.

Vámos que se lléga la noche, Let us go, for night drawes on.



Colóquio Priméro en úna Hostelería.

First discourse in an Inn.

A. Díos séa en ésta cá-
sa. Olá, quien
hái allá dentro?

B. En hora buena venga
v. m.

A. Sóis vos el huespéd?
B. Sói el mózo, y criá-
do de cása, para servir
à los huéspedes honrá-
dos como v. m.

A. Seré yó bién hospe-
dado aquí ésta noche?

B. Si señor, v. m. será
mui bien tratado, y no
le faltará cosa que ape-
téscfa.

A. Cómo se lláma el hué-
sped?

B. Llámase Guillermo el
Büeno.

A. Quiéra Diós que tal
le halle. Quál es la en-
seña de su cása?

A. G O D be in this
house. Hoy, who
is there within?

B. Sir, you are very wel-
come.

A. Are you the landlord?
B. I am the man, and ser-
vant of the house, to
serve such worthy guests
as you, Sir.

A. Shall I be well enter-
tained here?

B. Ye. Sir, you will
very well treated, and
shall want for nothing
you can desire.

A. What is my landlord's
name?

B. His name is Williar
Good.

A. God grant I may find
him such. What sign has
be to his house?

B. Mejor

- B. Mejór no le hallará v. m. en ninguna párté. La enseña es la justicia.
- A. Buén huésped en casa, y la justicia à la puerta, no hái mas que desear, finó es que seáis vos confórme a lo demás.
- B. V. m. díga de mi lo que la experíencia le enseñare; que no es de hómbres honrados a labárse à si próprios.
- A. Ea pués, llevad mi cabállo a lo caballeriza, dadle harta pája, y no le quiteís luégo la silla, que viéne sudado.
- B. Manda v. m. que le lléve al río a beber, o que le dé agua en la caballeriza?
- A. Dexádle primér refrescar, y despú dadle el agua, no de torozón el bósér estando caliente.
- B. V. m. es servido que le quite las bótas, y le tráhiga únos pantúflos?
- A. Bién dices, trahédlo; porqué he perdido mis zapatos en el carriño. Trahédme tambien una escobilla pára limpiar el vestido, y agua
- B. You will not find a better any where. The sign is Justice.
- A. A good landlord in the house, and justice at the door, there is nothing else to be desir'd, but that you be suitable to the rest.
- B. Sir, You may speak of me as you shall find by experience; for it is not the part of honest men to commend themselves.
- A. Well then, lead my horse to the stable, litter him well, and take not off his saddle presently, because he is hot.
- B. Do you please I shall lead him to the river to drink, or that I give him water in the stable.
- A. Let him cool first, and then give him his water, lest he should have the gripes by drinking when he is hot.
- B. Does it please you, Sir, that I draw off your boots, and bring you a pair of slippers.
- A. You are in the right; bring them, for I have lost my shoes by the way. Bring me also a brush to clean my cloaths, and water to cool my bands,

pára refrescarme las manos y la bóca, y quitár todo éste pólvo.

and mouth, and get rid of all this dust.

B. Aquí tiene v. m. todo lo que píde. descánse, y míre si quiere cenár sólo, o con lós otros huéspedes.

B. Here is all you ask for, Sir, rest your self, and consider whether you will sup alone, or with the other guests.

A. Mas vale cenár adónde hai conversación que sólo, y en cenando me acostaré, que véngo cansado, y quíero descansár.

A. It is better to sup with company, than alone, and when I have supped, I will go to bed, for I am weary, and will rest me.

B. Muí bien hará v. m. peró con ayuda de un traguito de víno, se duérme mejor.

B. You will do very well, Sir, but with the help of a little wine, a man sleeps better.

A. No es málo él consejo, yó me acomódo con el; Vámos pués, si es hora.

A. Your advice is not amiss, it fits me; let us go then, if it is time.

B. Tódo està aparejado, y sólo espéran a v. m.

B. All is ready, and they only wait for you, Sir.

A. Pués yó voi, que no es razón hacér descomodidá a los demás; y pára decir la verdád, me hállo bien dispuesto pára comér; que la hambre empiéza a picár. Múcho me alégro, Señóres, de hallár tan buena compañía, v. m. se sírvan de sentárse.

A. I go then, for it is not reasonable to incommodate the rest; and to say the truth, I find my self well disposed to eat, hunger begins to pinch. gentlemen, I am very glad to find such good company, be pleased to sit down.

C. En tomándo v. m. su sillento, nos irémos todos acomodando.

C. Sir, when you are seated, we will all place ourselves.

- A. Múcho me hónrap v^s. A. You honour me much,
m^r. yó aquí estói mui
bién ; no gastémos el
tiempo en cumplimi-
éntos, que la céna fría
no es buéna.
- D. Pues éste Caballéro lo
mánda, obedescámos.
Aquí no son menestér
trinchantes, mejor es
que cada uno éche má-
no à lo que le agradáre,
y comámos ahóra ; que
después havrá tiempo
pára discurrir lo neces-
fáro.
- A. Esto es lo que à mi
me conviene, por ha-
ver hecho jornada lár-
ga, y comido póeo.
- E. Mózo, dámé de bebér,
para aguzár el apetito.
- B. V. m. me díga lo que
gústa de bebér.
- E. Dám^d un buen trógo
de víno de Fráncia, que
es el mejor à mi gústo.
- A. A mi, un buen vás^s
de carneza, que tengo
sed, y es buéna pára
matárla.
- D. Si tenéis buéna cídra,
por principio de céna
me agrada mas que ó-
tra bebida.
- C. Pues pára mi, el vino
del Rhin es el mayór
regalo, si es verdadéro.
- A. You honour me much,
Gentlemen, I am very
well here ; let us not
waste time in compli-
ments, for the supper
cold, is not good.
- D. Since this gentleman
commands it, let us obey.
Here is no need of car-
vers, it is better for eve-
ry one to lay hold of what
he likes, and let us eat
now, for we shall have
time to talk as much as
is requisite afterwards.
- A. That suits me very well,
because I have made a
long journey, and eaten
little.
- E. Waiter, give me drink
to sharpen my appetite.
- B. Sir, you will tell me,
what you please to drink.
- E. Give me a good glass of
French wine, which is
the best in my opinion.
- A. Give me a good cup of
beer, for I am thirsty,
and that is good to quench
it.
- D. If you have good cyder,
I like it better than any
other liquor to begin with
at supper.
- C. For me, Rhenish wine
is most delicious, if it be
right.

E. Dicen,

E. Dícen, que el vino de Canárias es pára mugéres, peró à mi gusto, no hai ninguno que se le iguale.

A. El vino en general es mejor que quántas cósas han inventado los hombres pára paladeárse, o ántes pára destruírse.

C. Los que excéden dela templanza, para destruirse lo gastan; peró con moderación todos los liquores se pueden tomár.

D. Si la gente se gobernára como débe, todas las cósas crió Diós para servicio del género humano, y vémos el exceso que hái en tódas.

E. Han dádo en abrasfarse las entráñas con aguardiente de mil géneros, y las mugéres en hartárse de téa hásta que no les cábe.

F. En ésta casa no faltan nada, que se pueda apetecer pára comér, o bebér regaladamente.

A. Bién se écha de ver por lo que aquí tenemos presente, y ferá bién no cometámos las

E. They say Canary is for women, but for my palate none is to compare to it.

A. Wine in general is better than all other things, men have invented to please their palates, or rather to destroy themselves.

C. Those who exceed temperance, waste it to destroy themselves; but with moderation, all liquors may be used.

D. If people would govern themselves as they ought, God created all things for the service of humane race, yet we see the excess there is in all.

E. They are fallen into a way of burning out their bowels with a thousand sorts of strong waters, and the women of filling themselves with tea, till they cannot hold it.

F. There is nothing wanting in this house, that can be desired to eat and drink daintily.

A. That is visible in what we have here before us, and it will be convenient that we do not commit culpas

cúlpas que condenámos
en otros. the faults we blame in others.

C. Que hora es, pára que nos acostémos tan presto, teniendo ocasión de divertirnos? C. What a clock is it, that we shou'd go to bed so hastily, when we can divert ourselves?

B. Han dado las doce. B. It has struck twelve.

C. El tiempo no se siente en buena conversación. C. Time slips away in good Company.

D. Bueno será retirarnos, que también la gente de casa ha de descansar. D. It will be well for us to withdraw, for the people of the house must rest too.

E. Muí buénas noches les dé Diós á vuestras mercedes. E. God give you a very good night, Gentlemen.

A. Venid vos conmigo, mózo? A. Do you come along with me, waiter?

B. Aquí estoy pára servir á su mercéd. B. I am here at your service, Sir.

A. Ayudadme a desnudar. A. Help to undress me.

B. Aquí está la servilleta pára el bonete. B. Here is the napkin for a cap.

A. Está bien enjúta, y las sábanas lo están? mirad no me matéis con ropa húmeda. A. Is it very dry, and are the sheets so? Take heed you do not kill me with damp linnen.

B. Mi áma es mui cuidadosa en éste particular, es mugér de conciencia, y no quiere que padescan los huéspedes, por su descuido. B. My mistress is very careful in that particular, she is a conscientious woman, and will not have her guests suffer through her neglect.

A. Pocas hái tan cuidadosas de sus huéspedes, o de sus almas; las mas como cobren el dinero, A. Few take such care of their guests, or of their own souls, most of them, so they get the

no se acuerdan de otra cosa. money, think of nothing else.

B. V. M. gústa que le sirva en otra cosa? B. Does it please you, Sir, I should serve you any farther?

A. Por ahóra no me salta mas que dormís, y el sueno se va acercando. A. At present I only want to sleep, and I find it coming upon me.

B. Diós se le dé a v. m. descansado. B. God grant you very good rest, Sir.



Colóquios Espanóles è Ingléses. Spanish and English Colloquies.

Coloquio segundo,

Entre dos Caminantes, llamados Don Juan, y Don Ricardo; interviniendo a veces sus dos Criados, y un Huesped.

COLOQUY II.

Between two Travellers, called Mr John, and Mr Richard; their two Servants, and an Host, sometimes putting in a word.

D. J. **S**Alido hémos al fin de Sevilla. **W**E are at length got out of Sevil.

D. R. Hárto me pésa à mi de la salida, ró es fuerza hacer de la necesidad virtud; que quién de mas no puéde, morir se déxi.

Mr R. This parting troubles me sufficiently, but it is requisite to make virtue of necessity; for when a man can do no more, he must submit to dye.

D. J. Que havéis dexado atrás que tanto os aflige su ausencia?

Mr J. What have you left behind, that you are so much grieved at its absence?

D. R.

D. R. No he dexádo Mr R. I have left no
ménos, que el corazón, y less than my heart, and soul,
el alma; que há días, que which have been for some
están en podér de cierta time past at the disposal of
dáma. a certain lady.

J. Dexádla, pués ella J. Do not mind her,
se quédala quiéta en su casa, since she is at ease in her
y rogará a Diós por nosó- house, and will pray to
tros, que nos vámos can- God for us, who are tiring
sando por éste camino. ourselves upon our journey.

R. Podré yó decíros lo R. I may say to you, as
que díxo un amigo, à a friend did, whose young
quién se le avía muerto un child was newly dead, when
niño, que consolándole some comforted him, saying,
algunos con decir, tendría be would have one to pray
quien rogasé por el en el for him in heaven, and be
cielo, respondió; no sé si answered; I know not whe-
tendrá tanta habilidá. ther he is capable of it.

J. Mejór podréis decir J. You had better say as
lo que díxo el otro llevan- another did, who when his
do à su mugér à enterrár; wife was buried, being ask-
que, preguntándole cómo ed why he did not go with
no iba con ella en el en- the burial, answered, let
tiérro, respondió, Váya- ber go so for this time, I
se esta vez assí, que à otra know what I have to do in
yó sé lo que tengo de ha- the next.
cer.

R. Dexémos grácias, R. Let us leave jesting,
que no puédo tan presto for I cannot so soon forget a
olvidár à quién túve tánta person I so entirely loved.
voluntad.

J. No sé, si me aven- J. I know not whether
ture à decir, que en ésta I may venture to say, that
dáma tuvísteis mal gusto. you had no good fancy in the
lady.

R. Porque?

R. Why?

J. Porqué es mui gó- da.

J. Because she is very
far.

R. Cóntrâ gusto, no R. There is no arguing
hâi disputa. Quânto y against tastes. Besides, a fat
mas, que la muger górdâ woman is cool in summer,
es fréscâ en el verano, y and keeps a man warm in
en el invierno tiene con winter, and is not all bones
que abrigarse un hómbre, to bruise him.
y no huéssos que le hágan
mal.

J. No nos metámos en J. Let us not enter upon
semejânte disputa; dexé- such a controversy; let us
mos à cåda lóco con su leave every mad-man to his
téma, y volvâmos à ha- own humour, and let us a-
blár de Sevilla, que désde gain talk of Sevil, for from
ésta cuésta se divisa algú- this hill, there is a view
na parte de su grandéza, of some part of its gran-
que no es tan pôca que no dour, which is not so incon-
se puéda decir mucho en siderable, but that much
su alabanza. may be said in praise of it.

R. La tórre es la que
se paréce.

R. It is the steeple that
appears.

J. Notâble es su altu-
ra, y mas que puéden su-
bir hásta lo alto délla dos
personas juntas à caballo.

J. The height of it is ve-
ry remarkable, and it is so
much more that two persons
together may ride up a
borse-back to the top of it.

R.. Y la Girálida, * que
le fâlta si con cåda vién-
se mûda.

R. And what can the
* Giralda want, if she
turns with every wind.

J. 'Esto yo lo jurâra.

J. I would freely swear
it.

R. Diréis, que porqué
tiene nômbrê de hembra.

R. You mean, because
she bears a woman's name.

* Note, That this Girálida is the name of a vast Figure of a Woman, that stands on the top of the aforesaid great Steeple of Sevil, and serves for a Weather-cock, turning with the Wind, and is called Girálida for Giradla: and this from Girâr, to turn about with the Wind.

J. Y ésto no básta? Pe- J. And is not that suf-
ró volvámos à nuestro ficient? But let us return to
téma.

R. Esta torre con las R. This tower, with
dos hermanas a los lados, the two sisters on the sides
son armas de su santa i- of it, are the arms of its
glésia.

J. Quién son las dos J. Who are the two si-
hermanas?

R. Santa Justa, y Sán- R. St Justa, and St Ru-
ta Rufina, Patronas désta fina, the patronesses of this
gran ciudad.

J. Siénto en el alma el J. It grieves me to the
no haber visto en ella el heart that I have not seen
monumento que hacen el in it the sepulcre they make
juéves Santo.

R. Es cosa peregrina R. That is very extra-
ésto, y las limosnas que ordinary, as are the alms
se dan essa semana.

J. Por cierto, que la J. The church is cer-
Iglesia es sumtuosa.

R. Hayéis notado las R. Have you observed
muchas Capillas que tie- how many Chapels, Doors,
ne, puertas, y Altares? and Altars it has?

J. No.

R. Pués pásan de se- R. Then, there are a-
ténta los Altares que hái bove seventy Altars in it;
ella; tiene también it has also nine doors, and
nueve puertas, y ochenta eighty windows. The gran-
vidrieras. La grandezza de dour of the steps is extraordi-
aqueñas gradas es cosa nary, without mentioning the
peregrina; y sin ésto, el Archbischop, Dignitaries, Ca-
Arzobispo, Dignidades, sons, Demy-Canons, Vi-
Canonigos, Racionerós, cars Chorals, Chaplains,
Veinteneros, Capellanes, Musicians, Sacristans, Sing-
Músicos, Sacristanes, Mó- ing-boys, Vergers, and ma-
zos de choro, Pertigué- ny more; but what is a-
ros, y otros muchos; bove all the revenue only
sobre

sobre todo, pásá la rénta for repairs, is above fifty de sólo su fábrica de cinc thousand Ducats, quenta mil Ducados.

J. La custodia, dicen, que es cosa admirable say, is a wonderful thing to be seen.

R. Es tan grande que la llevan en un carro. R. It is so big that it is carried in a cart.

J. Pués que tendrá de peso?

R. Mas de mil y trescientos marcos de plata, que hacen veinte y seis arróbas; dé altura tres hundred weight and a half; várás y media; y ésto, sin la cruz que lleva por remate, que es de una cuarta; y el ancho de columna tiene cerca de dos várás.

R. Above a thousand marks of plate, which amount of six arróbas; the height three yards and a half, without including the cross on the top, which is a quarter of a yard long; and the breadth of it between the columns, is near two yards.

J. Sospécho que es una de las ciudades mas antiguas Sevilla, de quantas hái en España.

J. I fancy Sevil is one of the antientest cities in Spain.

R. Mil setecientos y veinte y siete años, antes que Christo se encarnasse, sand seven hundred and tuvo principio su antigua fundación. Pero dexando esto, es sin numero la riqueza que en si encierra, y la remota gente que en ella se halla.

R. The ancient foundation of it was laid a thousand years before the incarnation of Christ. Besides, the wealth it contains is immense, as is the number of remote nations that resort to it.

J. Muchas cosas hái que asombran en ésta ciudad, como la Alcazaria, el Real Alcazar, la Aduana, casa de la Moneda,

J. There are many things to be admired in this city, as the exchange of shops, the royal palace, the custom house, the mint, the mer-

néda, Lónja de los mercaderes, la Cárcel, la Alhóndiga, su juridición con hórca y cuchillo, &c.

chants exchange, the goal, the granaries, its jurisdiction with power of life and death, &c.

R. Sin esto, provée Sevilla de azéite à todo el Reino, y las Indias.

J. Yo he oido decir, que muchos días se registran en la aduana mas de diez mil arrobas.

R. Hablar de sus bastimentos ou pan, vino, carne, frutas, caza, y pescado, sería nunca acabar.

J. Las dos colunas que tiene, en la una puésta la figura de Hercules, primér fundadór desta gran ciudad; y en la otra Julio Cesar, que la ilustró con los muros, y cércas que la rodean, y quince puertas en ellos que la engrandézen; son, por cierto, memorables.

R. Si mirámos en élo; que mayór grandéza que éstos Caños de Carmóna, que fabricaron los Méros.

J. Pués havéis nombrado a Carmóna, decid algo délla, porqué yo no la hé visto mas que de pásso, y sé que dista seis léguas de Sevilla.

the granaries, its jurisdiction with power of life and death, &c.

R. Beside, Seville furnishes the whole kingdom and the West Indies with oil.

J. I have heard it said, that several days, above ten thousand arrobas (that is 125 tun) are entered in the custom-house.

R. It would be endless to talk of its provisions, of bread, wine, flesh, fruits, fowl, and fish.

J. The two pillars in it, with the figure of Hercules, the first founder of this great city on one of them; and on the other, that of Julius Cæsar, who adorned it with the walls, and works that encompass it, and fifteen gates in it that contribute to its grandeur, are very remarkable.

R. If we rightly consider it; what more grandeur than this Aqueduct of Carmona, which was built by the Moors.

J. Since you have named Carmona, give some account of it, for I have seen no more than in passing through, and know it is six leagues from Sevil.

R. La ciudad de Carmóna está puuesta en sitio na es seated on an eminence, ehirénente, con fuertes mu- and has strong walls, with
18 torres, y vistó 118 towers on them, a so azar; regando sus beautiful palace, and its spa- dilatadas végas Cárboles y cious meadows are watered Guadána. Produce su té- by the rivers Carbones and
mijo mucho pan, vino, Guadána. Its territory
azéte, aves, frutas, horta- produces much corn, wine,
lizas, glos, y todo lo oil, fowl, fruit, herbs, cat-
que es essário pára la tle, and all that is necessary
vida humana. Tiéne la for human life. The city
ciudad tres mil vezinos, contains three thousand fa-
divididos en siéte Parró- milies, divided into seven pa-
chias, con cinco convén- rishes, with five monasteries
tos de Frailes, otros tán- of men, and as many of
tos de Mónjas, y buénos nuns, and good Hospitals.
Hospitáles.

J. No havéis oido ha- J. Have not you heard
blár de úna famósa hechi- talk of a famous witch said
zera que dicen hupo un to have lived sometime in
tiempo en Sevilla, y des- Sevil, and to have removed
pués se passó à Carmóna? thence to Carmona?

R. No sólo he oido ha- R. I have not only heard
blár délla, peró la conocí, talk of her, but I knew her,
y vi todos sus instrumén- and saw all her tools, which
tos, que no éran sino unas were mere trumpery, and
baratijas, por lo qual no therefore I believe nothing of
creo en hechizos. witchcraft.

J. Yo à la verdád créo J. For my part I verily
que los hái; peró que los believe there is; but whe-
háya, o no los háya, de- ther there is, or is not, tell
cidme lo que sabéis de va- me what you know of that
quélla viéja embustera. cheating old woman.

R. Ella se aprovechá- R. She made use of a
ba de mil cósas, como son thousand things, as beans,
hábas, verbéna, piédra verbein, eagle's stone, a bad-
del águila, pié de texón, ger's foot, a balter one bad
foga de ahorcado, grános been hanged in, the seed of

de helécho, espina de erizo, flor de yédra, huélfos de corazón de ciervo, ójos de loba, unguéntos de gato negro, pedazos de agujas clavadas en corazones de cabritos, sangre y bárbas de cabrón berméjo, sésflos de asno, y una redomilla de azéite serpentino, sin otras invenciones de que no me acuerdo.

the fern, the prickle of an hedge-hog, the flower of ivy, the bones of a stag's heart, the eyes of a she-wolf, ointment of needles stuck in hearts of kids, blood and hair of a reddish be-goat, brain of an ass, and a little veil of oil of serpents; besides other inventions which I cannot call to mind.

J. Y en que pararon todos éstos hechizos?

R. En que la encorazaron, y à ella, y à otros diéz, les dieron trecientos azotes, tras lo qual me embió à avisar que se iba à Antequera, que si quería la fuésser a ver, y sino que me llevaria en boandas.

J. Fuéla à ver, o supo que fin túvo?

R. No la ví, que no me importaba el buscárla, ni pudo ella con todo su saber, hacerme bolár; pero supo que fué à Antequera, donde la cogieron haciendo hilar un cedazo, y echando unas habas, y le dieron otros doscientos azotes; partió de allí a Málaga, adónde dió à su miserable vida.

J. And what came of all these spells?

R. That she was carted, and she, and ten more, had three hundred lashes a-piece, after which, she sent me word she was going to Antequera, if I pleased I might go see her, or if not she would carry me through the air.

J. Did you go see her, or did you hear what end she had?

R. I saw her not, for it did not concern me to look for her, nor could she with all her art make me fly; but I heard she went to Antequera, where she was taken making a sievespin, and casting beans, and they gave her two hundred lashes more, she set out from thence to Malaga, where she ended her wretched life.

Criado 1. Señores, no se olviden v^s. m^r. con la conversación, que se va a perder that the night draws llegando la noche, y si nos quedamos à la señá de la estrella, la cámara será dura, y la cama ligera.

Serv. 1. Gentlemen, let not your discourse make you forget that the night draws on, and if we should take up at the sign of the star (that is under the canopy of heaven) our bed will be hard, and our supper light.

La hambre débe de havér llegado, que la noche no está tan cercána, pero el aviso no es para despaciár.

J. It is likely you are hungry, for night is not so near at hand, but the advice is not amiss.

Criado 2. En verdád, mis señores míos, que mi camarada tiene razón, que lo mejor es llegar con dia à la posada, cenar despácio, y acostarnos temprano, pués estos caballos nos traerán harto molidos, y los estómagos bien gastados.

Serv. 2. In truth, my masters, my comrade is in the right; for it is best to get into the inn by daylight, to sup at leisure, and go to bed before these horses will tire us sufficiently, and get what we have eaten.

R. Pués tenéis parte en ella, no fabricáis aprovecháros de la conversación, y no ponér todo vuestro cuidado en comér y dormir, que son las cosas en común entre los brutos y los hombres, siendo la razón la que nos diferencia de ellos.

R. Since you partake in it, could not you improve upon the discourse, and not set all your thoughts upon eating and sleeping, which are things in common between beasts and men, whereas it is reason that distinguishes us from them.

Criado 1. Señor mas vale una lónja de tozino de bacon is better for a man para quién tiene hambre, que una cámara mullida para bed for him that is tired, quién viene cansado, que toda la razón del mundo; world; and reason itself.

Serv. 1. Sir, a rasher of bacon is better for a man than a soft bed for him that is tired, than all the reason in the world; and reason itself.

y la misma razón nos en- teaches us to seek for that
féná que busquémos lo which necessity requires, and
que requiere la necessidád, to maintain our bodies.
y el sustentár nuéstros cu-
érpos.

J. Ea, caminémos pués, J. Well, let us go on,
aunque no séa por mas que tho' it be only to go to our
complacér à éstos mózos men, who seem to be hungry ;
que paréce que van con and what is still worse, I
háambre ; y lo peór, que am afraid we have lost our
cemo havémos errado el way, and here is no body to
camino, y aquí no hái à enquire of.
quién preguntár.

R. En quanto al cami- R. As for the way, I
no, créo que vám̄os bien se- believe we are safe enough ;
gúros ; pero con tódo, however, it will not be amiss
buéno ferá preguntar, pu- to ask, for if I mistake not,
és, si no me engáño, allí I see a Shepherd yonder.
veo un pastór.

J. Lleguémonos allá à J. Let us go thither to
preguntár. ask.

R. Amigo, decídnos, R. Tell us friend, is this
es éste el camino à Car- the way to Carmóna ?
móna ?

Pastór. Bien van v^s. m^r. Shep. You are right,
el camino es derécho, no Gentlemen, the way is
le puéden errár. straight, you cannot miss it.

J. Quanto camino nos J. How far have we yet
quéda aun hasta la ciu- to the city ?
dad ?

Pastór. Dos léguas y Shep. Two leagues and
média, tódo llano, sin su- an half, without any ascent.
bida ni baxada, tierra rasa, or descent, plain ground,
y limpia. and fair.

R. Diós quede con vos, R. God be with you,
amigo.

Pastór. Y váya con v^s. Shep. And go along with
you, Gentlemen.

J. Bién podémos caminar de espacio, pués tenemos bastante día, y conviene aliviár los cabállos, que han de caminár mañana.

J. We may very well ride leisurely, since we have day enough, and it is good to ease the horses, who are to travel to morrow.

Criado 1. Porcierto, señor, que es mucha la caridad para con los cabállos, sin acordarse de que también nosotros no nos hemos de quedar en la cámara.

Serv. 1. In truth, Sir, your charity is very great towards the horses, without considering that we are not like to lie a-bed.

Criado 2. Y si nos cogen los salteadóres, que al anochecer salen de sus escondrijos, quedaremos peor librados, y podrá ser que sin cámara, ni camisa.

Serv. 2. And if we should fall into the bands of the highwaymen, who in the evening come out of their lurking holes, we shall be in a worse plight, and perhaps have neither bed nor shirt.

R. Pués quién te díxo a ti, que aquí havía salteadóres? éstos quando los hái es allá en Sierra Morena; qué en tierra descubierta cómo ésta no se atreven á mostrár la cara.

R. Why, who told you, that here were any highwaymen? when there are any it is yonder on the mountain Sierra Morena; for they dare not show their faces in such an open country as this is.

J. Quánto y mas que siéndo nosotros quatro, y four of us, and all carrying todos con buenas armas de fire arms, it must be no fuégo, no han de ser pocos small number that can rob los que nos han de poder us; for besides that of our dinero; porque además del money, it would be a great dinéro, fuéra mucha pérdida of reputation to suffer de reputación dexárdidnos to be stripped when nos desvalijár, viniéndo we are so well provided tan prevenidos.

J. Besides that, we being small number that can rob us; for besides that of our money, it would be a great loss of reputation to suffer ourselves to be stripped when we are so well provided.

Criado 1. Yo le dói mi palábra a v. m. que ántes me máten que me quíten lo que llevo, que no me inclino à passar la nóche en un camino muriéndo de hambre; pero, con todo, mas vale guardár lo que tenemos en paz, que no aventurár las vidas en defensa déllo, sin necesidad.

Serv. 1. I give you my word, Sir, they shall sooner kill me than take what I have from me, for I have no mind to lie all night, starving with hunger, upon the high-way; and yet it is better to save what we have in peace, than to hazard our lives in defence of it, without any need.

R. Bien has dicho, y yo créo que Diós nos ha librado de semejantes a- ventúras, pués hemos llegado à las puertas de la ciudád.

R. You say well, and I believe God has delivered us from any such adventures, for we are now at the city gates.

J. Apeémonos en éste albergue, que es uno de los mejores.

J. Let us alight at this inn, which is one of the best.

R. Diós séa en ésta casa.

R. God be in this house.

Huesped. V. m^s. séan mis bien venidos mis señores.

Host. You are very welcome, my masters.

J. Tendrémos aquí todo lo necesario, Huesped? míre, que somos personas que nos tratamos bien.

J. Shall we be furnished with all that is necessary, landlord? take notice, that we are men who make much of our selves.

Huesped. Quánto quisiéren v. m^s. hallarán, a pedir de boca, camas aseadas y sábanas limpias.

Host. You will find every thing you would have here, Gentlemen, ask and have neat beds, and clean sheets.

Criado 1. Si, pero pára cenár, que la cama sin cena no hace buen sueño.

Serv. 1. Ay, but the supper, for a bed without supper, will not make one sleep sound.

R. Mirád vos por los cabállos, que téngan mu- R. Do yo look to the
cha y buéna pája, buén ty, and good straw, good
héno; y buéna ceváda, o bay, and good barley, or
avéna, y dexád el cuidá- do de la cena que en the supper, for that is in
buénas manos quédala. good bands.

J. Ahora, huésped, que hui que comér? J. Now, landlord, what
is there to eat?

Huesped. Hái liébre, co- Host. There is bare,
néjos, perdices, póllos, rabbits, partridges, chickens,
póllas, capones, gánsos, pullets, capons, geese, ducks,
ánades, pavos, carnéro, turkeys, mutton, beef, pork,
váca, puérco, cabrito; kid; do you please, Gentlemen.
escojan mis Senóres.

R. Con un par de per- R. A couple of par-
díces, & una buena polla, tridges, and a good pullet,
havrá pára nosotros; pero will be enough for us; but
pára los mózos será me- our men must have some-
nestér cosa de mas péso. thing more substantial.

Huesped. Dexénlo vs. Host. Leave it to me,
m. a mi cuénta que yo Gentlemen, and I will en-
procuraré agradár á ámos, deavour to please both ma-
y criádos. sters and servants.

J. Séa así, háya ba- J. Let it be so, provide
stante pára todos; y dád- enough for all; and now let
nos ahóra à probár de us taste your wine, whilst
vuéstro vino, miéntras se the supper is dressing.
guísa la cena.

Huesped. En quanto al Host. As for wine, there
vino, no le hái mejor en is no better in Spain; for
toda España; que aunqué tho' I am no drunkard, nor
no sói borracho, ni bebe yet a drinker, what I drink
dór, lo que yo gásto qui- must be very good, and
éro que séa buéno, y tal such I give to my worthy
le dói à mis huespedes guests.
honrádos.

R. No quisiera decir R. I would not talk foo-
disparates, pero los bué- lishly, but great drinkers
nos

nos bebedóres tiénen por have a saying, that good refrán, que el buén vino wine carries men to heaven. Iléva los hómbres al cielo.

J. No entiéndo cómo J. I do not understand
eso púeda ser. how that can be.

R. Dícen ellos, que el R. They say good wine
buén vino cría buena sán- breeds good blood, good blood
gre, la buena sangre en- begets good conditions, good
géndra buena condición, conditions bring forth good
la buena condición páre works, good works carry
buenas óbras, las buenas men to heaven.
óbras llévan los hómbres
al cielo.

J. Dexémoxos éstos dí- J. Let us lay aside these
chos profanos, y vámoxos profane sayings, and go to
à la igléxia mas cercána, à the next church, to return
dar grácias à Diós que nos thanks to God for having
ha trahido aquí con bién, brought us hither in safety,
y rogár nos guarde en a- and pray he will protect
delante. us for the future.

Pláticas éntre céna. Discourse at supper.

R. No hái mayór re- R. There is no greater
gálo que úna perdiz. dainty than a partridge.

J. Pára mí no le hái J. There is no greater for
mayór, que una buena me, than a good pullet.
pólla.

R. Cóntra gústo no hái R. There is no disputing
dispúta. Por esto se gásta against tastes. That is the
tódo. reason that all things go off.

J. La experiencia nos J. Experience shows,
muéstra, que lo mas es- that whatsoever is most
cásio es siémpre lo mas e- scarce, is ever most valued;
stimado; que lo que án- for that which is over plen-
da sobrádo, en poco es tiful, is made little account
tenido. of.

R. 'Esa es verdád mí J. That is a truth well
conocida, y arguir contra known, and to argue against
ella

ella fuéra negársé à lo que *it, would be opposing that*
 estám̄os viéndo con los o- *which we daily see with our*
jos ; peró hai pérsonas tan eyes ; but there are some
amigas de porfiár, que men so fond of contending,
aún lo que está paténtē à that they will not believe
los ójos no quiéren conce- what is evident to their eyes.
 dér.

J. Por ésto hái tántas J. That is the reason,
 dispútas en el mundo, por wby there are so many dis-
 el mal naturál de tales pér- putes in the world, through
 sónas, que no quiéren dex- the ill disposition of such per-
 árse llevár de la razón, si- sons, who will not suffer
 nó de su vanidád, la qual themselves to be led by rea-
 los hácē nécios por no pa- son, but by their vanity,
 recérlo. which makes them fools for
 fear of being thought so.

R. Esta vanidád es la R. That vanity has the
 que mas pártē tiéne an tó- greatest share in most things
 do lo que hacém̄os, y de- we do, and say ; for there-
 címos ; porqué pocas ó- are few words or actions free
 bras, o palábras hái que from some touch of that
 no téngan su púnta deste vice.
 vicio.

Huesped. Con su buena Host. Wish your good
 licéncia de v^r. m^r. véngo leave, Gentlemen, I come
 à sabér si está la céna à to know whether you like
 gusto ; si falta algúna có- your supper ; or whether
 sa en que les podámos ser- any thing be wanting that
 vir en esta casa, y si con- this house affords, and whe-
 ténta el vino. ther the wine is to your li-
 king.

J. Si nos quexáramos, J. If we should complain,
 la culpa fuéra nuéstra ; it would be our own fault ;
 que en verdád las áves no for in truth the fowls cannot
 puéden ser mejóres, ni be better, nor better dressed,
 mejor guisadas, y el vino and the wine is such, that
 es tal, que si tuviéramos if we were wont so to do,
 tal costúmbre nos hiciera it would intice us to drink
 bebér mas de lo necesario ; more than is necessary, but
 però

peró sin cometér excéssio we will make much of our
nos hemos de regalár con selves without exceeding, for
el, porque alégra el cora- it chears the heart.
zón.

R. Es mui honrádo R. Our Host is a very
nuéstro huésped, y su trá- honest man, and behaves
to es confórme, y tal será himself accordingly, and on
de nuéstra pártē la págā. our part the pay shall be sui-
table.

Huesped. Viván mis señó. Host. God preserve you
res muchos años, por la many years, my masters,
mucha mercéd que me for the great favour you do
hácen, y el conténto que me, and the satisfaction I
me dan en servír personas receive in serving persons of
que tanto merécen; por so much worth; for some-
qué à véces después de times after all possible pains
havér trabajado lo possibile has been taken to please,
por agradár, hái algunos there are some that cannot
que no puéden dar buéna give a good word.
palabra.

J. Eso ó procéde de J. That either proceeds
tenér mai perversa condi- from a perverse temper, or
ción, ó de su naturál mi- from their covetous nature,
seráble; por parecérles, believing that despising all
que despreciando quanto that is set before them, they
les pónen delante, quedan are the less obliged to pay
ménos obligados à la bu- generously, always making
éna pága, riñéndo siém- a broil about the reckoning.
pre sobre la cuénta.

R. Eso mañana lo ve- R. We shall see that to
rémos; y téngo en tan morrow; and I have so good
buéna opinión à nuéstro an opinion of my host, that
huésped, que no créo I do not believe there will
havrá porqué reñir; quán- be any cause to differ; be-
to y mas que no me hállo sides that, I am no way in-
inclinado à esas pendén- clined to those quarrels, and
cias, y si me la hácen úna if I am once put upon, I
vez me guárdo de la se- take care of being so a second
gúnda,

gúnda, y avísó à todos los *time*, and give notice to as que puédo que se guárden. many as I can, that they may secure themselves.

Huesped. Yo les promé- Host. I promise you, to à v^o. m^o. que no tendrán Gentlemen, you shall have de que guardárse, si la cu- no occasion to shun me, if énta no les contentáre, pa- the reckoning does not please garán lo que gustáren; you, you shall pay what you que yó sé que no han de please, for I know you querér que les sírvan de would not be served for no- válde, ó que piérda quién thing, or have me lose by les sírve. serving you.

J. Amigo, vuéstro bu- J. Friend, your civility én procedér nos tiéne ob- has obliged us, and we will ligados, y nosotros no not fail to do accordingly; dexarémos de correspon- let us now go to bed, and dér; acostémonos ahóra, a good night to you. y quedad à buénas nó- ches.

Huesped. Múi buénas se Host. God give you a las dé Diós à v^o. m^o. very good night, Gentlemen.



Colóquios Espanóles è Inglesiſes.

Spanish and English Colloquies.

Colóquio tercero.

COLLOQUY III.

Entre un Amo llamado Between a Master called
Don Alonso, y su Criado, Don Alonso, and his
ádo, un Sástre, y una Servant, a Taylor, and
Lavandera, y Don Pedro. a Laundress, and Don
dro. Pedro.

Acérca de lo que táca al vestirse, cortesía, y news. About what belongs to
cortesía, and news. dressing, civility, and

Amo. O Yés, mózo, que hora es? Master. D O you bear,
lad, what time of the day is it?

Criado. Son las nueve dadas. Servant. It has struck
nine.

A. Porqué me dexáste dormir, sabiendo que tenía que hacér? A. Why did you let me sleep, knowing that I had business to do?

C. Por no enojár à v. m. pues quién duérme siempre siénde que le inquieten. S. For fear of making you angry, Sir, for they that sleep, are always vexed to be disturbed.

A. Yá no se puéde remediar. Enciénde áhora now. Light the fire, and la lumbre, y caliéntame warm me a shirt, and a úna camisa, y únas calzas, y sacame ótros calzones, que me quíero levantar. M. There is no remedy. C. Qual

C. Qual vestido gústa v. m. de ponérse? S. What suit of cloaths will you please to put on, Sir?

A. Dáme el negro.

M. Give me the black.

C. Lo peor es, que no hái camisa limpia.

S. The worst of it is, that there is no clean shirt.

A. Pues cómo, teniendo tantas? Eres descuidado en extrémo, y me gastas la paciencia.

M. How so, when I have so many? You are excessive careless, and tire my patience.

C. No se impaciénte v. m. pues bien sabe que todas viniéreron trahidas del camino, y que no há havido tiempo de lavar, y enjugárlas, aunque yo mucho se lo encomendé à la lavandera; pero ella se há venido, sin llamárla.

S. Sir, be not impatient; for you know they were all worn, upon our journey, and there has not been time to wash and dry them, though I gave the Laundress a great charge about it; but she is come, without sending for.

A. Bién há sucedido, y ella merece ser mui bien pagada por su cuidado, y diligencia.

M. It has hapned well, and she deserves to be very well paid for her care, and expedition.

Lavandera. Diós le pague à v. m. éssa buena consideración, y charidá; que muchos caballeros hái, que quieren que los pobres les sirvan de vólde.

Laundrefs. God reward you, Sir, for that good consideration, and charity; for there are many Gentlemen, who would have the poor to serve them for nothing.

A. No se entiende ésto conmigo; decíd lo que mόnta la rópa, y se os pagará.

M. That is not my tem per; say what the Linnen comes to, and you shall be paid.

L. El criado, Señor, la contará, y me dará lo que daba à otras.

L. The Servant, Sir, may count it, and give me as he gave another.

C. A mi cuenta, mόnta diez reáles.

S. According to my reckoning, it comes to ten royals.

A. Esse

A. 'Esse es hacér la cu- M. That, is reckoning
énta sin la huéspeda ; de- without your Hostess ; do
zid vos, Senóra, lo que os you say, mistress, what will
contentará ? content you ?

L. 'Esse, Senór, es pré- L. That, Sir, is a known
cio sabido, no hái que re- price, there is nothing to say
plicar ; si v. m. fuére fer- to it ; if it shall please you
vido de dárme algúna có- to give me something for
sa, por havér trasnochá- having sat up to serve you,
do pára servíle, le esti- I will be thankful for the
maré la mercéd. favour.

A. Bién lo havéis me- M. You have well de-
recido, ahí tenéys los di- served it, there are the ten
réales que mónta la ró- royals the linnen amounts to,
pa, y éstos dos de ventája. and two royals over.

L. Mil años viva mi L. May my master live
Sénór, à quién suplico a thousand years, and I be-
mández siémpre à ésta su seech you always to employ
póbre criáda. this your poor servant.

A. Id con Diós, y bol- M. God go with you,
ved el sábado. Mózo, and come again on Satur-
mandástes venir el Sástre? day. Lad, did you order
the Taylor to come ?

C. Dos horas há que le S. I called him two hours
llamé, y créo que el es ago, and believe it is he that
que súbe la escalera. is coming up the stairs.

A. A buén tiempo lle- M. You are just come in
gáis, que ya estaba para time, for I was ready to go
salir ; cómo havéis tardá- abroad ; what made you stay
do tanto ? so long ?

Sástre. No pude mas, Taylor. I could not help
Señór ; que quién sirve à it, Sir ; for he that is to serve
múchos, no es duéño de many, is not master of his
su tiempo. own time.

A. Bién está, yó os hé M. It is well, I have
embiado à llamár pára que sent for you to make me two
me hágais un par de ve- suits of cloaths.
stidos.

S. Ordéne v. m. cómo los quiere, y pára quán- do. T. Give your orders, Sir, how you will have them made, and against what time.

A. Haréisme un vestido entero de escarlata, con sus guarniciones de oro, de las mejores. El otro será blanquecino llano, sin guarnición alguna. M. You must make me a whole suit of scarlet, with gold trimming of the best. The other of a whitish colour plain, without any lancing.

S. Aquí tráhigo buena cantidá de muéstras de todos géneros, v. m. míre si le agrádan. T. I have brought a considerable quantity of patterns of all sorts, see, Sir, whether you like them.

A. No es menestér mirallo mas ; éstas dos muéstras escójo, y los vestidos se hágan con tódā brevedad. M. There is no need of looking any farther ; I choose these two patterns, and let the cloaths be made as soon as possible.

S. Si v. m. no manda otra cosa, me voi à disponer lo que me há ordenado. T. If you have no other commands, Sir, I will go to provide what you have ordered.

A. Bién sabéis la confianza que hágo de vos, compradme un par de medias de seda, y otro de estambre, digo de medias stockins for each suit : and pára cada vestido : y media docena de guantes blancos ; todo que sea causa being come off a presto, porqué como vengo de camino no tengo lo necesario pára parecer en la corte.

M. You know how much I confide in you, buy me one pair of silk stockings, and another of worsted, I mean white gloves ; all as soon as may be, before I have met necessaries to appear at court.

S. Mañána à la noche estará aqui el vestido llano, y de alli à dos dias el guarnecido, en esto no avrá falta. T. To-morrow night, the plain suit shall be here, and, two days after, the laced, there shall be no failure in it.

A. Si

A. Si así lo cumplís, M. If you perform it, I
no pígo mas. desire no more.

C. Señor, aquí está Don S. Sir, Don Pédro is
Pédro. here.

A. Entre su mercéd, M. Let him come in,
pués me la hace tan grán. since he does me so great a
de en adelantárs e en ve- favour as to be before-hand
nirme à vér, siendo mi with me in coming to see me,
obligación haver ido à be- when it was my duty to have
sárle lá mano. gone to kiss his hands.

D. P. Dexémos cum- D. P. Let us lay aside
plimientos, que parécen compliments, which do not
mal éntre amigos verda- look well among real friends.
deros. V. m^d. séa mí You are very welcome, Sir,
bién venido, y me alégro and I am glad to see you in
de verle bueno. good health.

A. Y yo lo mismo de M. And so am I to find
hallarlé aquí y bueno. you here and well.

D. P. Yá que ha lle- D. P. Since the happy
gádo la feliz hora de vol- hour is come, that we are
vérnos à juntár, décidme met again, tell me something
alguna cosa de lo que ha- of what you have seen in
véis visto en Fráncia, France, which I have so
que tanto la he deseado much coveted to see my
ver. self.

A. Los que han cami- A. Travellers are often
nado à véces son sospe- liable to be suspected, as
chósos, tomandóse la li- taking the liberty to invent
bertad de inventár lo que whatsoever their imagina-
les dícta su imaginacion; tion dictates to them; some
unos exagerando las cosas extolling things far beyond
mí allá de la verdá, y truth, and others despising
otros despreciando quanto all that is out of their own
hái fuéra de sus propias countries. France is such
tierras. Fráncia es tal que a one, that it needs no hy-
no necesita de hypér- perboles to commend it, as
boles para alabárla, te- having so much truly to be
niéndo tanto verdadero admired, that the eyes are

A a que

que admirár, que no se *not satiated with beholding*
 hárstan los ojos de mirár, *and it is a shame there*
 y es verguenza, que háya *should be such foul tongues*
lenguas maldiciéntes que as do speak ill of it.
 se atrévan à *hablár mal*
della.

D. P. Por sabér con D. P. *As I very well*
 quanto desenfado algunas *know with what an air*
 personas cuéntan lo que *some persons tell what they*
 apénas han soñado, yo *scarce dreamed, I give lit-*
dói poco crédito à lo que tle credit to what I hear in
óigo en las conversaci- conversation that accidental-
ónes que acaso se ofrécen, ly occurs, being satisfied there
conociéndo, que no faltan are men that value them-
hombres, que se precian selves upon lying; whereas
de mentir; siéndo un ví- it is a vice that all men who
cio de que todo hombre are well born ought to be
bien nacido se débe afren- ashamed of.
tár.

A. Infame cosa es no
 tratár verdád.

D. P. Infinitos son los
 dános que acarréan éssas
 malditas hablillas.

A. Quántos predica-
 dóres hai no son bastán-
 tes párə poner fréno à las
 lénguas, mal lo harémos
 nosotros.

D. P. A que propósito
 es el predicár, si la vida
 del predicadór no corres-
 pónde con el sermón.
 Mas fuérza tiéne un mal
 exemplo que diéz pláticas
 fantas. Y lo que peor es,
 cómo los sermones se há-
 cen por fines mundanos,

A. *It is an infamous*
thing not to speak truth.

D. P. *Infinite mischiefs*
are the consequence of that
cursed tittle tattle.

M. *All the preachers in*
the world are not able to
curb tongues, it is not likely
that we should do it.

D. P. *To what purpose is*
it to preach, if the preacher's
life is not suitable to the ser-
mon. One bad example is
more prevalent than ten bo-
ly discourses. And what is
still worse, the sermons be-
ing made for worldly ends,
it is not to be wondered
no

no hái que espántar que *that they produce no spiritual fruit.*
no hágan frutos espiritu-
áles.

A. La mala vida de M. *The ill lives of the ecclesiastics* es la *churchmen are the ruin of perdition of the laymen.* But let us not Peró no nos vám̄os embarcando en vidas ajénas ; *launch out too far in other men's lives ; let every man cáda uno míre por si, y look to himself, and the andará el mundo mejor.* world will go better.

D. P. Assí es ; volvámos pues à vuéstro viáge, *us therefore return to your y contádme alguna cosa del.* D. P. That is right ; let

A. Que os hé de con- A. What shall I tell tár? Esas relaciones pí- you? Those relations renden mucho espacio ; if si desire to be informed, read deseáis informáros, leéd éssos borradóres, en los quáles hallaréis muchas particularidades, quo íba assentando miéntras las te- whilst they were fresh in nía fréscas en la memoria.

D. P. Pára mi no havrá mayór placér. Pe- D. P. Nothing can be more pleasing to me. But ro decídme que os paré- tell me your opinion of the ce de la nación Francésa. French nation.

A. Acérca de la Na- A. As to the French na-
ción Francésa no tengo ción, I have nothing else to
que decir ótra cosa, sino que todos, en común, son ral are very civil ; but to
múi civiles, pero es me- treat with them, is requisite
nestér una grande arte pa- great consideration, because
ra tratár con ellos, pues they are very cunning and
son múi sagáces y enga- deceitful.
ñosos.

D. P. Eso yá me lo D. P. That I knew be-
sabía yo antes, pués uno *fore, since one of them de ellos me engañó condos cheated me of 200 pieces of*

mil pesos que le presté ; eight that I lent him ; and y lo peor es, que jamás what is the worst, is, that oí palabra de el hasta la I never heard a word from semána pasada, que rece- him till last week, that I bí una carta suya. received a letter from him.

A. Apostaré, que es la M. I will lay a wager misma persona que yo ví that is the same person I en Orleáns, pues me ha saw at Orleans, because he bló de v. m. este se lla- spoke to me of you, his name mába

D. P. El mismo, pero D. P. The very same, la carta que tengo, lléva but the letter I have from la fecha de París. him, bears its date from Paris.

A. Bien puéde ser, M. That may well be, porque según me díxo, because as he told me, he tenía intención de partirse had a mind to set out for para París el día sigui- Paris the next day. ente.

D. P. Que haré yo pa- D. P. What shall I do
ra cobrár mi dinero ? to get my money ?

A. Que ? Venírse con- M. What ? Come to mígo à París, y obligarle Paris with me, and oblige allí que le pague ; yo in- him there to pay you ; I tento volvér allá dentro tend to return thither within de dos meses, y el me two months, and he told me díxo que quería estable- that he would settle himself cerce alla en la calle de there in St Anthony's street, San António, en donde vi- where his parents live. And ven sus Padres. Y con with this opportunity you esto v. m^d. tendrá el gusto will have the pleasure of see- de ver las muchas y mag- ing the many and magnifi- níficas fábricas que hái en cent buildings that are Fráncia, y especialmente in France, and especially el Palacio y jardines de the palace and gardens of Versailles, que son los me- Versailles, which are the jores del mundo. best in the world.

D. P. Así lo haré, y D. P. So I will, and I vóime ahóra à hablár so- go now to speak to my s- bre

bre ello à mi Padre que ~~ther about it,~~ who is at
está en casa.

A. A Diós pues, pero
déxese ver mañana, y ha-
blarémos mas sobre esto.

M. Farewel then, but
~~let me see you to-morrow,~~
and we will speak more up-
on this subject.

D. P. Está bien ; à Di-
os.

D. P. It is well ; fare-
well.

Colóquios Espanóles è Ingléses.
Spanish and English Colloquies.

Colóquio quarto.

Sobre várias Matérias, én-
tre quatro Camaradas,
Diégio, Fernández, Tho-
más, y Eduárdo.

COLLOQUY IV.

Upon several Subjects,
between four Compa-
nions, James, Ferdi-
nand, Thomas, and Ed-
ward.

D. Y'A que hémos co-
mido, vámónos
à passeár al jardín, que
dicén es buéno pára la di-
gestión, y escusarémos de
dormír la siesta.

F. Dezís bien, que ésta
costúmbre de dormír es
muí perezosa, y si no es
en tiempo de grandíssima
calór, mejor es divertir-
nos.

T. No gastémos el ti-
empo en ceremonias, que

J. NOW we have
dined, let us go
walk in the garden, which
they say is good for digestion,
and we shall avoid sleeping
the afternoon nap.

P. You are in the right,
for this custom of sleeping in
is very buriful, and unless it
be when the heat is excessive,
it is better to take some di-
versia.

T. Let us not spend time
in ceremonies, for it is very

es muí mal gastádo, y no ill spent, and I do nat love gústo déllas. *them.*

E. A. mi no me agrá. E. I like them not, but dan, mas la cortesía sí. civility is always good. pre es buéna.

D. Repáren bien en lo que viéren, y verán mú- what you see, and you will cha curiosidád en éste jar- see much curiosity in this dín, que es úno de los me- garden, which is one of the jores que se hállan en éstas best that are in these parts. pártex.

F. Estos andámios son muí agradables por la sombra de los árboles, y lo odorífero de las múrtas. F. These walks are very agreeable for the shade of the trees, and the sweet scent of the mirtle.

T. Otra buéna calidád tiénen, que es, ser largos para evitar las múchas vueltas à que obligan los còrtos; y lo áncho que puéden andár seis personas à la par con descánso. T. They have another good quality, which is, that they are long to save the often turning there must be in short ones; and their breadth, that six persons can walk abreast in them.

E. Las éras tan límpias que se puéde dormir en ellas; y según la yérba està verde parécen mullidas, y comvídán à echárselas.

E. The beds are so neat that they are fit to sleep on them; and the grass so green, that they look soft, and induce us to lie down upon them.

D. Esta enramada es deleitosa en el veráno, es- puésta à todos los viéntos para refrescár, y libre de los ráyos del sol.

D. That arbour is delightful in summer, exposed to all winds to refresh, and free from the sun-beams.

F. Esta grúta contódo, en mi opinión, le háze mucha ventaja en lo fresco, y en lo apacible, seméjase mucho con lo natural, y goza los adórnos del arte.

F. However this grotto, in my opinion, is much bettered it for coolness, and a greeableness, it looks very natural, and has the ornaments of art.

T. Aquélla

T. Aquélla fuente es
béllo, y aquélla cascada
háce un ruído que parece
alégra, y al mismo tiempo
adormece los sentidos
con lo incessable del sonido.

T. That fountain is beau-
tiful, and that cascade
makes a noise that seems to
exhilarate, and at the same
time lulls, the senses asleep
with the incessant sound.

E. Adelantémonos un
poco à ver los frutales, y
gozar de su fruta.

D. Pára mi no la hái
mas deliciosa que los hí-
gos, y aquí los hái en per-
fección.

F. Yo me conténto con
durázños, quando son
grandes y maduros, como
los déste arbol.

T. Estos melocotones
me llévan à mi los ojos,
y tienen éllos un gusto
soberano.

E. Por no querér lo
que otro quiere, pues to-
dos se han diferenciado,
yo escójo pára mi éstas
Péras bergamotas, y rega-
lémonos cada qual confór-
me à su apetito.

D. No nos dexemos
llevár, como les niños,
de la fruta, que Diós crió
pára el sustento, y no pá-
ra engolosinarnos. Escu-
chémos un rato el dulce
cánto de los pajarillos,
que sin ayuda de maestros
hacén una musica, quán-

T. That fountain is beau-
tiful, and that cascade
makes a noise that seems to
exhilarate, and at the same
time lulls, the senses asleep
with the incessant sound.

E. Let us advance a lit-
tle to see the fruit trees, and
enjoy the fruit.

J. None is more delicious
to me than figs, and here
they are in perfection.

F. I am satisfied with
peaches, when they are large
and ripe, as these on this
tree.

T. These melocotones
charm my eyes, and they
have a sovereign taste.

E. Because I will not be
for the same as another is,
since you have all varied, I
make choice of those berga-
mot pears, and let us treat
ourselves every one to his
own appetite.

J. Let us not be delud-
ed like children, by the fruit,
which God made for sus-
tance, and not to indulge
our appetite. Let us a while
listen to the sweet singing of
the little birds, who with
the help of masters make
such musick, as is the more

tó mas natural, mas maravillosa. wonderful, the more natural it is.

F. Ellos los únicos de los otros aprénden, y los que mas habilidad tienen salen mas diestros, como entre los hombres; que cada discípulo salió conforme al talento que Dios le dió, y no conforme al maestro.

F. They learn of one another, and those which have the best capacity prove most skilful, as it is among men; for every learner proves according to the talent God has given him, and not according to the master.

T. El Ruiseñor es más lágro de la naturaleza, y hace ventaja a todos los demás. No lo he visto, pero afirman que es tanta a veces la fuerza que ponen en cantar, que se caen muertos.

T. The nightingale is a wonder in nature, and surpasses all others. I have not seen it, but it is affirmed, that they sometimes strain themselves so much with singing, that they drop down dead.

E. La calandria no queda a debér mucho al ruiseñor, y no se si a veces no le iguála; ni es him; nor is the goldfinch ménos de estimar al galguero, pero sobre todos es el canario.

E. The lark comes not far behind the nightingale, and perhaps sometimes equals her; nor is him; nor is the canary less valuable, but the canary bird is beyond them all.

D. De los cantores hayéis nombrado los principales y merecen ser estimados; pero que haya pájaros que apréndan a formar voz humana, y hablar palabras distintas, es lo mas de maravillar, y he oido yo mismo un pagayo que cantava de tal manera, que quántos le oyeron sin verle, juzgavan que era persona humana.

J. You have named the chiefest of the singers, and they deserve to be valued; but that there should be birds that learn to form an human voice, and speak distinct words, is most to be admired, and I myself have heard a parrot that sung after such a manner, that all who heard him concluded it was some human person.

F. También háblan las maricas, y los tórdos, pero jamás con la perfección que los Papagáyos ; y es digno de reparar que teniendo estas aves pícas y no bocas como nosotros, pueden formar palabras, lo qual por ésto éllas hacen allá en el gaznate.

E. Magpies, and black-birds, also talk ; but never so perfectly as parrots ; and it is worthy observing, that those birds having beaks, and not mouths like us, they can form words, which they do within their throats.

T. Múcho hái que considerár en el hablár y cantar de las aves ; pero también me paréce que merece nuéstra atención aquella prodigiosa variedad de colores, que se halla entre ellas, porque apenas el arte ha llegado a igualárlas.

E. Mui hermosas las produce nuéstra Európa, pero no llégan con mucho à las que se hallan en la Asia, y la América.

D. Conversando acerca de las aves nos hallamos entre estos estanques, que se hallan mui bien provistos de todos los géneros de peces que viven en semejantes aguas, y hái diferentes géneros déllos.

F. Lo principal en estos estanques son picas, o lúcos, y cárpas ; pero en éste río se cogen infinitas truchas, y à su tiempo salmones que suben de la

F. Much reflexion may be made upon the talking and singing of birds ; but I am of opinion that the prodigious variety of colours, that is found among them, deserves our observation, for art has scarce been able to match them.

E. Europe produces very beautiful birds, but they do not come near those that are found in Asia, and America.

D. Discoursing concerning the birds we are come among these ponds, which are very well stored with all the sorts of fish that live in such waters, there are several sorts of them.

F. The chiefest in these ponds are pikes, or jacks, and carps ; but in this river an infinite number of trouts are taken, and in the sea are salmon, that come up mar

mar à desovár, y después from the sea to spawn, and
en su fazón los salmonzil- afterwards at their time the
los que báxan à criárse en small salmon that go down
la mar. to breed in the sea.

T. Esta es otrá de las T. This is another of the
maravillas de la natura- wonders of nature, or to
léza, o hablando con mas speak more properly, of the
propriedad, de la divina divine wisdom, the immen-
sabiduría, la immensidad sity of the sorts of fishes,
de géneros de péces, sus their different shapes, that
diferentes formas, aquél- hideous magnitude of some,
la espantosa grandeza de and the strange smallness of
los unos, y la rara peque- others.
ñez de otros.

E. Múcha es la distin- E. There is a great di-
ción en los tamáños, cómo versity in sizes, as also in
también en la figúra, o the figure, or make, but as
hechura, pero en lo que for beauty, I know not of
tóca à hermosura, no sé any that is among them all,
que se halle en algúno dél- on the contrary most of them
los, ántes los mas son dis- are misshapen, and no way
fórmes, y poco agradables pleasing to the sight, having
à la vista, sin tener cosa nothing agreeable to the eyes,
que conténte à los ójos, a- besides their being dumb, and
demás de ser mudos, y having no voice.
faltárles voz.

D. Si no puéden entre- J. Though they cannot
tener los ójos, ni los oídos; entertain the eyes, nor the
alomenos no les falta con ears; however, they do not
que satisfacér el gusto; want something to please the
pués no hái mayór regalo taste; for there are no
que el que nos dan la mar, greater dainties than those
y los ríos, en tan varios the sea, and rivers afford
platos como déllos se sa- us, in such variety of dishes
can, si no faltan buenos as are taken from them,
cocineros que los sépan if there be no want of cooks
guisar.

F. No quíero despreciár lo que tanta parte del mundo estima ; pero para mi mas vale una pieña de carnéro, o un lomo de váca que quanto las aguas producen ; y sivamos à las áves, éstas en delicadéza — sobrepújan quanto hái en el universo para el sustento humano.

T. Digo que tenéis bien gusto, y me atengo yó à la carne que cría carne, y satisface, dexando el estómago bien proveido para en adelante ; siéndo el pescado de la naturaléza del eleménto en que se cría, que por mas que se hárte una persona, luégo se hällá con hambre, porque no queda substancia.

E. No puedo ir contra ésse parecer, pero con todo vemos que hái géntes en el mundo que mas viven de pescado que de carne, y noobstante son robustas, y en las grandes mésas tienen en mucho el salmon, las langostas, las ostras, y otros muchos géneros ; y los pecados salados, y en escabéche dan mas nutrimento, entre los quáles se pueden contár el abadéjo, el esturion, y el atún.

F. I will not undervalue that which so great part of the world values ; but for my part I had rather have a leg of mutton, or a sun-lom of beef, than all that the waters produce ; and if we go on to the fowls, they in delicacy exceed all the world affords for the sustenance of men.

T. I say you are in the right, and I am for flesh which breeds flesh, and satisfies, leaving the stomach well furnished for the time to come ; whereas fish is of the nature of the element it is bred in, so that though a man eat never so much to satiety, he is presently hungry again, because no substance remains.

E. I cannot oppose that opinion, however we see there are people in the world who live more upon fish than upon flesh, and nevertheless they are strong, and at great tables they highly value salmon, lobsters, oysters, and many other sorts ; and fish that is salted, or pickled affords more nutriment, among which may be reckoned poor jack, sturgeon, and tunny fish.

D. Con qualquier cosa D. *Whatsoever it is that que nos criémos es cierto we are bred with; it is cer-*
que hemos de crecer, y tain that we shall thrive,
hallárnos bien; assi vé- and do well; thus we see-
mos que no hái hombres there are no men stronger,
mas fuertes y bien dispu- and lustier than those of
éstos que los de algunas some of the very northern
pártes mui septentrioná- parts, where from their in-
les, dónde désde la niñez, fancy, their main sustenance
su principal sustento, es is barley, or oaten bread,
pan de cebáda, y avéna, some milk, roots, without
alguna leche, raíces, sin being ever acquainted with
sabér que cosa es vino, y wine, and very little with
mui poco de carne, o pes- flesh, or fish.
cado.

F. Los que se crían con F. *Those who are dainti-*
regálo no pueden con é- ly bred cannot bear that sort
stos mantenimientos. La of food. Nature is satisfied
naturaléza con poco fe with little, but the body
conténta, pero hásé de ha- must be injuried to it from
cér el cuérpo à ello désde the first years, for after-
los priméros años, que des- wards it is too late. Let
pués es tarde. Mirémos us look upon our squeamish
nuestras dámas melindró- ladies, if they should have
sas, si les pusíeran delante such things set before them,
lo que son regálos pára as are dainties for our coun-
nuestras labradóras, no les try women, not one morsel
entrára bocádo en el cuér- would go into their stomach.
po.

T. Yá qué se ha hablá- T. *Since so much has*
do tanto del comér, razón been said of eating, it is but
será no nos olvidémos que reasonable we should not for-
tambien se ha de bebér, y get that we are also to drink,
dexándo aparte el agua and leaving aside the water
que crío Diós en general which God created not only
no sólo pára los hombres, for men, but also for all the
sinó también pára quántos creatures he has placed in
animáles ha puésto en este this world in general, wine
mundo, es el vino el mas is the most sovereign of all
soberáno

soberáno de quántos li- *the liquors that have been*
quóres hasta este día se han *known to this day, or that*
conocido, o que las edá- *future ages, and human in-*
des venidéras, y la humá- *vention will ever find out for*
ra invención hallarán pa- *the benefit of rational crea-*
ra bién de las criatúras ra- *tures.*

E. Los vinos que pro- E. *The wines Spain a-*
dúce sólo *España* apénas *lone produces are hardly to*
se puéden contárt, pués *be reckoned up, what then*
qué será de tódas las ótras *must there be in all other*
tiérras? Hablár desso fué- *countries? To talk of that*
ra nunca acabár. El ví- *would be endless. Wine in*
no en general tiene mu- *general has many virtues*
chas virtúdes templada- *moderately used, and with-*
ménite usádo, y sin ser me- *out being obliged to have re-*
nester acudir à los médi- *course to physicians, or an-*
cos que nos las dígan, o *cient authors, experience*
à los autóres antiguos, la *teaches us, that it gives*
Esperiéncia nos enséña que *strength, makes the coun-*
da fuerzas, alégra el ró- *tenance cheerful, fortifies*
stro, fortifica los nérvios, *the nerves, helps the sight*
ayúda à la vista de los ójos, *of the eyes, cherishes the sto-*
esfuérza el estomágo, hág- *mach, causes good digestion,*
ce buena digestión; despi- *sharpens the appetite, causes*
erta el apetito, hágce buén *sound sleep, drives away me-*
sueno, quita la tristeza, y *lancholy, and rejoices the*
pónale gracia en el corazón, *heart, which are sufficient*
que son bastantes alabán- *commendations, and known*
zas, y verdádes conocí- *truths, which no man can*
das, que no hái quien las *deny, and besides all this it*
puéda negar, y sin tódo *is so agreeable to the palate,*
esto es tan agradable al *that so many are ruined on-*
paladar que por ésse solo *paladar that pleasure.*
gusto hai tántos que se pi-
érdan.

D. En verdád que ha- J. *In truth you have*
veis acertado en no can- *been in the right in not tir-*
árnos con los disparátes *ing us with the absurdities*
de

de muchos de los antí- *of many of the ancients, with*
 guos, con que siémpre nos *which the moderns who*
 están empalagándo los mo- *would gain the reputation of*
 dérnos que quiéren ganár *having read much are al-*
 fáma de mui leídos, por- *ways cloying us, for their*
 que son tan enfadófas sus *rules are so disagreeable,*
 réglas, que no hai pacien- *that no patience can bear*
 cia que báste pára éllas. *with them. One of them*
'Uno nos enseña quánta teaches us how much water
agua se ha de mesclar con must be mixed with our
el vino; otro pone tassa wine; another fixes like
en las veces que se ha de number of glasses that is to
beber; otro nos dice ha- be drunk; another tells us
sta que edad nos hémos till what age we must ab-
de abstener; otro no qui- stain; another will not al-
ére que lo béban las mu- low women to drink it; and
géres; y assi otras mil pa- thus a thousand fopperies,
taratas conforme à lo que according to what every one
cada uno déllos tenía en- of them had at that time in
tónces en la cabéza. his head.

F. Yo no entiendo pa- F. I do not understand
 ra que son tántos precép- what so many precepts are
 tos, todo hombre templá- for, every moderate man
 do sabe lo que en éste ca- knows what is fit for him in
 so le conviene, sin que this case, without standing
 séan menester cuéntos vi- in need of old stories of two
 éjos de dos mil años; y thousand years; and drun-
 los borráchos se rién, y re- kards laugh at, and curse all
 niégan de rótadas éssas vejé- those antiquities. Besides
 zes. Quanto y mas que that, there are some young
 hái mózos que no necesí- men who have no less occa-
 tan ménos de un trágico sion for a glass of wine than
 víno que los viéjos, y hai the old, and there are sto-
 estómagos que requieren machs that require double
 dobladá la cantitád que ó- the quantity as others. Then
 tros. Pués decir que no to say that women must not
 lo béban las mugéres drink it, is also a piece of
 tambien tiene su pedazo madness; as if their bodies
 de locura, como si sus cu- were not human, and did
 érpo:

érgos no fuérán humáños, *not stand in need of that*
y no necessitáran de aquél *comfort as well as men.*
alívio también como los
hombres.

T. Que mayór locúra T. What greater mad-
puéde havér que el ir à pe- ness can there be than to go
dír consejo de los muertos ask advice of the dead, for
pára lo que estámos vién- those things we see with our
do con los ójos, y palpán- eyes, and feel with our
do con las máños? Peró bands? But that custom is
está éssa costúmbre tan in- so established, that the bea-
tróducida, que no sólo en then philosophers are not on-
las conversaciões entrán ly thrust into conversation,
los philosophos gentiles, without head or tail; but
sin que ni para que; mas the very preachers stun us
los mismos predicadóres with sentences from Plato,
nos atúrden cosí sentén- Seneca, Pliny, Socrates,
cias de Platón, de Seneca, &c. as if there were no ho-
de Plínio, de Sócrates, &c. ly fathers, and christian
cómo si no huviéra, san- doctors to have recourse to.
tos pádres, y doctóres
christianos à quién acudir.

E. Nō hái cosa más e- E. Nothing is more nota-
vidénte que los grándes rious than the great bene-
biénes que hácet el vino al fits human race receives
género humáno; peró from wine; but at the same
también es gran lástima time it is a great pity that
que la demasia cáuse tán- the excess of it should occa-
tos dáños, y no es de es- sion so many mischiefs, nor
pantár, porqué según ré- is it to be wondered at, for
glas de philosophía la cor- according to the maxims of
tupción de lo mejor es la philosophy, the corruption of
peór, es à sabér, que the best things is worst, that
quánto mejores son las có- is, how much the better
fas en si mismas tanto things are in themselves, so
mas pernicioñas son, quán- much the more pernicious
do o elljas se corrómpen, they are, when either they
o nosotros usámos mal are themselves corrupted, or
délitas.

D. Bién

D. Bién haveis repará-
do en éllo, porqué es ci-
erto que no hai cosa que
más males acarrée que el
demasiado bebér. Quán-
tas muertes, quántos al-
borotos, quántas deshone-
stidádes ha occasionado la
embriaguéz ; y quántos
milláres, sin hacer daño à
otros han destruído su sa-
lud, è incurrido en infiní-
tas desgracias, por havérse
facádo de juicio con éste
abominable vicio ; sin ha-
blar de la deshónra, o por
mejor decir infamia de
ponérse un hombre en the infamy of a man's put-
peór estado que las bestias
mas brútas, por tan estra-
gádo apetito cómo es el
bebér con demasía.

J. You have observed
right, for it is certain that
nothing produces more mis-
eries than too much drink-
ing. How many murders,
how many uproars, how
many lewd practices has
drunkenness occasioned ; and
have destroyed their own
health, and fallen into infinite
misfortunes by having put
themselves beside their rea-
son by this abominable vice ;
not to speak of the dishonour,
or to speak more properly of
the infamy of a man's put-
ting himself into a worse
condition than the most bru-
tal beasts, for the sake of so
depraved an appetite as
drinking too much.

F. En muchas partes del mundo, no las quíero nombrár por no ofendér à nadie, y por no ser necesario, pués tódos los conócen, se ha introducido tanto ésta maldita costumbre, que el emborracharse no se tiene por afrenta; ántes hái lócos, que no les puedo dar otro título, que se precian de emborrachár à otros, y cuéntan éstas fealdádes como si fueran las mayores hazanas. Y me avergu-

F. In several parts of the world, I will not name them to avoid giving offence to any body, and because it is not necessary, since all men know them, this cursed custom has so far taken place, that to be drunk is not looked upon as a disgrace ; on the contrary there are mad men, for I can give them no other title, who value themselves upon making others drunk, and relate those shameful actions, as if they were the greatest

éozo de décillo, hái yá exploits. And I am ashamed of women that se iguálan en med to tell it, there are ésta viléza, con los hombres mas infames, espontáneamente à qualquier desatino; spués haviéndo perdido la razón, poco hái que fiár de lo demás.

now women that can match the most infamous men in this vile practice, exposing themselves to any folly; for when they have lost their reason, there is little trusting to the rest.

T. Con ser cosa natural el bebér agua, no se han contentado los hombres con ella; que en las tierras adónde no náce vino, han inventado otros géneros de breváges, éntre los quales el mas usado es la cervéza, la qual hacen tan fuerte que á veces soprepúja el vino, aunqué no es tan sana; con que le falta lo bueno, y le fóbra lo malo, y en particular llená los cuérpos de ventosidad.

E. Pués la cídra, aunqué es mas natural, y le hace mucha ventaja á la cervéza, no puéde competir con el vino, siendo muy cruda; con que causa desconcierto en los que no se han bién acostumbrado á ella.

D. También se bebe el zumo de las peras, y es tenido por mas pernicioso que la cídra. La ujía es cosa regalada en el

T. Though it be natural to drink water, men have not been satisfied with it, for in those countries which produce no wine, they have invented other sorts of liquors, among which, the most usual is beer, which they make so strong, that it sometimes exceeds wine, though it is not so wholesome, so that it wants the good, and has too much of the evil, and particularly it fills the bodies with wind.

E. Then as for cider, though it is more natural, and much preferable to beer, it cannot stand in competition with wine, as being very raw, so that it occasions fluxes in such as are not well used to it.

J. The juice of pears (perry) is also drunk, and is looked upon as more mischievous than cider. Mead is very delicious in summer, verano,

veráno, si se repára en solo el apetito, pero si mirámos la salud, es muy fría health, it is too cold for the pára el estomago, y por tanto stomach, and therefore it is ésto se ha introducido el become customary, to temer mesclarla con un poco de per it with a little brandy; agua ardiente; pero aún but even in that case it is en ésto es menester andar requisite to use caution, that con tiénto que no sea de it be not too much. masiada.

F. En buena conversación nos hemos metido, ry fine discourse, that if any que quién nos oyésse, pudiera tenernos en opinión take us for good drinkers, de buenos bebedores, sin though we have not deserved havér merecido tan mala ed that bad name. Let us fama. Volvamos pues à then return home, whilst casa mientras se hace hora supper-time comes on, for it ra de cenár, que ya présto se irá llegando, y no we shall not want something faltará en que entretenernos. to divert us.

T. Tenéis mucha razón, pués agóra da el relox las siete, y es bueno cenar temprano, pára no acostarse con el estómago acostártse con el estómago early, to avoid going to bed with a full stomach, and to have time to de parlár, y divertirnos. chat and to divert ourselves.

E. Eso muy bien se hace sobre cena, y mas well done after supper, especially con un trago de vino pecially with a moderate moderado, que así alegra glass of wine, for so el corazón. cheers the heart.

Coloquios Espanóles e Ingleses.
Spanish and English Colloquies.

Colóquio quinto. COLLOQUY V.

Entre dos Dámas, dos Caballeros, y dos Criadas. Between two Ladies, two Gentlemen, and two Maid-Servants.

Sobre várias Matérias. Upon various Subjects.

D. 1. **V**eaíd acá María, y compónedme éste tocado; no os detengáis en impertinencias, bien sabéis que no presúmo de mi, ni deseo enamorar á nadie; para mí el adorno decente, para no parecer ridícula. 1 Lady. Come bither Mary, and do not dwell upon im- pertinence, you know I have no conceit of my self, nor do I desire to make any body fall in love; it is enough for me to be decently dressed, not to appear ridiculous.

Cr. 1. Es v. m. muí fa fácil de contentár, dichosa yó en servir á quién tiene tan buen gusto; y bien desdichadas de las que han de estar quatro horas en pie para comprender una Dama, y por cárbo les paréce que no hái cosa bien hécha. 1 Serv. Madam, you are easily pleased, I am happy in serving one that has so good a fancy; and unhappy they who must be standing to dress a lady, and after all they think nothing well done.

D. 1. Si en mi halláres cosa buena, no quíero 1 L. If you see any thing that is good in me, I would que

que me lo dígas, que pa- *not have you tell me of it,*
 réce adulación, cuéntalo, *for it looks like flattery, you*
si quisieras, en mi ausén- *may tell it, if you will, in*
cia; lo malo que en mi my absence; what ill you
viéres, dímelo á mi, que see in me, tell me of it, and
te lo agrádecere; y callalo I will thank you; and con-
afuéra. *ceal it abroad.*

Cr. 2. Mi Señora Do-
 ña Susana está aquí.

2 Serv. My Lady Su-
 fanna is here.

D. 1. Pués la tiénes al-
 lá, sin decirle que éntre? Como os hacéis Señora
 tan estráña; siéndo tan a-
 migas, pára que usáys de
 cumpliméntos, sabiéndo
 que no gusto dellós?

1 L. Do you keep her
 there, without bringing her
 in? Madam, why do you
 make your self so great
 a stranger, when we are
 such friends, why do you
 use compliments, knowing I
 do not love them?

D. 2. No paréce cor-
 tesía entrárse sin avisar; y
 aunque nuéstra amistád
 paréce disculpa, siémpre
 es bueno el decóro, y di-
 cen que la demasiáda fa-
 miliaridád cáusa despré-
 cicio.

2 L. It does not look like
 good breeding, to come in
 without giving notice; and
 tho' our friendship seems an
 excuse, yet decency is al-
 ways good, and it is a say-
 ing, that too much familia-
 rity breeds contempi.

D. 1. 'Eso no se en-
 tiende éntre nosotras; pe-
 ró aquí viéne Don Juan,
 que es persona de mucho
 mérito, y muí entretení-
 do.

1 L. That is not to be
 understood between us; but
 here comes Don John, who
 is a person of much worth,
 and very good company.

Cabal. 1. Mil años vi-
 va quién tánta hónra me
 hácet, mereciéndo yó tan
 poco; aunque no estói
 sin mérito, pués trahigo a-
 quí á Don Rodrigo, en
 quién serán bien emple-
 ádas éssas alabanzas.

1 Gent. Long may they
 live who do me so much ho-
 nour, when I deserve so lit-
 tle; tho' I am not quite
 void of merit, for I have
 brought Don Rodrigo, on
 whom those commendations
 may be well bestowed.

Cab. 2. No quíero res- 2 Gent. I will not an-
pondér, no piénsen éstas swer, left the ladies should
Señoras que venímos de think, that we have agreed
conciérto à desír bien de to speak favourably of our
nosótrios mismos. selves.

D. 1. Sienténsé v. m. 1 L. Be pleased to sit
sin ceremonias, que es down without ceremony, for
tiempo perdido el que se all the time that is spent in
gásta en éllas. it is lost.

Cab. 1. No es ceremó- 1 Gent. The respect that
nia el respéto que se débe is due to Ladies is no cere-
à las Dámas; ni es lisón- mony; nor is it any flat-
ja decir lo que está patén- tery to utter that which is
te à todos; y por ésto po- apparent to all men; and
dré afirmár que éntre las therefore I may affirm, that
ótras perfecciones que a- among all the perfections
compánan à mi Señora that attend my Lady I-
Dóña Isabel, se esméra en sabel, she excels in the
escogér criádas; qué si no choice of her maids; for if
estuviéran preséntes dos there were not two such
táles bellézas, pareciéra beauties present, that of
soberána la destá donzél- this maiden would seem sur-
la, à quien Diós haga di- prizing, God make her ve-
chósa. ry fortunate.

D. 1. Si de décis à la 1 L. If you tell a wo-
mugér que es hermósá ú- man once that she is hand-
na vez, el diáblo se lo some, the devil will tell her
dirá diéz, segúñ la vul- so ten times, according to
gár opinión; por ésto me- the vulgar notion; for
jor es callár las alabanzas, which reason it is better to
aunque séan verdadéras, forbear praises, though they
que no ponerles motivos be true, than to give them
de vanidád, que siémpre occasion for vanity, which
fóbran en nosótrios. is always overflowing in us.

D. 2. No se que tiénen 2 L. I know not what
los hómbres, que por mas ails men, that though they
que apetézcan las hermó- are never so fond of beauti-
fas cómo haya dinéros se ful women, provided there be
eásan con las féas. money, they marry the ugly.

Cab. 2. 'Ellos dicen 2 Gent. They say they que las tóman à peso, sin take them by weight, with mirár en la hechúra. out regarding the fashion.

D. 1. Si no fuéra assí, 1 L. If it were not for muchas desgraciádas se that, many unfortunate fuérán vírgenes à la sepul- ones would carry their maid-tura. heads to their graves.

Cab. 1. Despoblárase 1 G. That way the déssa manéra el mundo, world would be unpeopled, pués es verdád conocida, since it is a known truth, que pára úna buena cara that for one good face there hái tres malas, y mas de are three bad ones, and a-quátrò que apénas se pué- bove four that can scarce be den llamár passadéras. called tolerable.

D. 2. Por lo que se ha 2 L. That which has dicho, hái tantos mal ca- been said is the reason that fados; porqué tomándose there are so many unhappy à peso, no puéden con la couples; for as they take cárrega, y dan con ella en one another by weight, they el suélo, buscando ótros cannot bear the burden, but entreteniméntos. let it drop to seek other di-versions.

Cab. 2. No salen siém- 2 Gent. Marriages are pre desgraciádos los casa- not always unhappy by re-miéntos por las malas cá- son of the bad faces, but ras, antes mas véces por oftner on account of the las peóres condiciones.

D. 1. Pués assí es, me 1 L. Since it is so, I am paréce que cómo hái Tri- of opinion, that as there bunáles pára todos delitos, are Courts for all crimes, le havía dehaver particular there ought to be in parti-pára los que cométen los cular for those that mar-casados; no digo sólo pá- ried persons are guilty of; ra los adulterios, peró I do not mean only for a-también para castigárt las dulteries, but also to punish culpas que se cométen én- the faults that are commit-tre marido y mugér en ted between husband and no tratárse cómo dében wife in not treating one a-con amór, y respéto, neither as they ought, with dexándose.

dexándose llevar de sus affection, and respect, gi-
passiones, con que se pi- ing way to their passions,
erde la paz para siempre. which destroys some for ever.

Cab. 1. 'Eosos juéces 1 G. Those judges ought
havían de tener don de to have the gift of prophecy;
profecía; que de ótra for otherwise it would be
manera fuéra impossible impossible to decide who had
averiguár quién tenía mas been most to blame in those
culpa en éstas pendencias home broils; and for the
caseras; y las mas véces most part the women are
son las mugéres las que- the plaintiffs, the men being
xósas, callando los hóm- silent to avoid discovering
bres por no descubrir su their shame.
afrénta."

Cab. 2. Pués se ha ha- 2 G. Since mention has
blado de juícios, aunqué been made of judgments,
no séa à este propósito, though it be not to this pur-
fino les desagrada à é- pose, if it be not displeasing
stas Señoras, diré uno no- to these Ladies, I will re-
table del Rey Don Pédro, late a very notable one of
que por ser desgraciado, King Peter, whom because
le llamaron el cruel. he was unfortunate, they
called the cruel.

D. 2. Diga v. m. mui 2 L. Tell it, in God's
en buena hora, pués no name, Sir, since we are
tenemos obligación de a- not bound to confine our
tarnos à una matéría, y selves to one subject, and
la variedad es agradable. variety is pleasing.

Cav. 2. Con éssa licén- 2 G. Upon that permis-
cia digo, que un Arcedi- sion, I say, that an Arch-
áno de la Iglesia de Sevil- deacon of the church of Se-
ta, mató à un zapatéro, vil killed a shoemaker, and
y un hijo suyo fué à pe- a son of his went to demand
dir justicia. Condenóle justice. The ecclesiastical
el Juéz Ecclesiástico en Judge condemned him not to
que no dixesse misa un say mass in one year. Soon
áño. Désde à pocos dí- after King Peter came to
as visto el Rey Don Pédro Sevil, and the dead man's
a Sevilla, y el hijo del son complained to him of

muerto se le quexó de la *that murder*. The King asked
 dicha muerte. El Rey le *ed him*, whether he had
 pereguntó, si havía pedí- demanded justice. He told
 do justicia. El le contó him *the case as it was*. The
 el caso cómo passaba. king said to him, *Have you*
 Dixo el Rey, Serás tu hóm- courage enough to kill him,
 bre para matálle, pues no since they will not do you
 te hacén justicia? Si Se- justice? Yes, Sir, answered
 ñor, respondió el zapate- the shoemaker. Do so then,
 ro. Pues házlo así, dixo said the king. The next day
 el Rey. El día siguiente the arch-deacon walking ve-
 yendo el Arcediano bien ry near the king in a pro-
 cerca del Rey en una pro- cession, the injured man
 cession, llegóse el agravi- kept up, and stabbed him
 ado, y dióle dos puñalá- in two places, so that be
 das de que cayó muerto. dropt down dead. The of-
 Prendióle la justicia, y ficers apprehended him, and
 mando el Rey que le trux- the king ordered that he
 éssen ante él, y pregun- should be brought before him,
 tóle, porqué havía muerto and asked him why he killed
 el hombre. El mozo dixo, that man. The young man
 Señor, porqué mato a mi said, Sir, because he killed
 padre; y aunque pedí ju- my father, and though I
 sticia no me la hicieron, demanded justice, it was
 El juéz eclesiástico, que not done me! The ecclesi-
 cerca, estaba, respondió astical judge, who was by,
 por si, que se la havía hé- answered for himself, that
 cho, y muí cumplida. El be bad done him justice, and
 Rey quiso saber la justicia. very fully. The king would
 El juéz respondió que le know what justice it was.
 havía condenado que en un The judge answered he had
 año no dixesse missa. El condemned him not to say
 Rey dixo a su alcalde, Sol- mass in a year. The king
 tad ésse hombre, y yó le then said to the goaler, Dis-
 condéno, que en un año miss that man, and I con-
 no cosa zapatos. damn him not to sow any
 shoes in a year.

D. 1. Si mirámos en el L. If we look upon
 modo de proceder, bien the manner of the proceed-
 fe.

se ve que no es conforme *ing*, it is plain it is not ac-
à las léyes; mas si en las *cording to law*; but if the
léyes no se halla la justi- law will not afford justice,
cia, razón es que no falte it is but reasonable that o-
por otra vía. El matar al *ther means be found for it.*
clérigo el ofendido, pa- *The plaintiff's killing a cler-*
réce sacrilegio también *gyman*, looks like *sacrilege*
cómo venganza, según la *as well as revenge, accord-*
opinión cristiana, y con *ing to the christian notion,*
todo tiene su justificación, *and yet it is in some manner*
siéndo por mandado de *justifiable, being done by the*
un Rey, que es juez supre- *command of a king, who is*
mo, y por no havér otro *supreme judge, and there be-*
camino de castigar tan *ing no other way to punish*
gráve delito: pués el no *so heinous a crime: for the*
decir misa en un año no *not saying mass during a*
era pena competente à tal *year, was not an equiva-*
maldad, y las que comé- *lent penalty to such an of-*
ten las personas dedicá- *fence, and those that are*
das à Diós, merécen ma- *committed by persons dedi-*
yor castigo que las de los *cated to God, deserve grea-*
segláres. *ter punishment than those*
of the laity.

Cab. I. No pudiéra a- 1 G. The ablest lawyer
vérlo decidido mejor el could not have decided it
mas famoso letrado; y é- better; and this case puts me
ste caso me tráhe à la me- in mind of what the Alcalde
mória lo que hizo el Al- Calderon did. A servant
cálde Calderón. Fuése á belonging to certain religious
quexár à el un criado de men went to complain to
unos Religiósos, de que ha- him, that having served
viéndoles servido el tiém- them the time he was oblig-
po à que estaba obligado ed to by contract, they
por concierto, no le que- would not pay him, that he
rian pagár, porqué se might stay with them, they
quedásse con ellos, pare- liking his service. The Al-
ciéndoles bien su servicio. cálde, or judge, sent for
El Alcálde embio à lla- the father procurator, in-
már al padre Procurádor, treating him as a favour,
supli-

378 A New SPANISH Grammar.
suplicando por mercé that he would come to his
viniéssse à su casa, à tratár house, to discourse about a
sobre cierto negocio; y certain affair; and charg-
aviso à un Alguazil, que ed an Alguazil, (or officer,) en viniéndo le tomásse la that when he came, be
mula, en qué venía, y la should take the mule he rode
pusiéssse à buen recáudo. on, and secure her. When
Venido el, recibiole el he came, the Alcalde re-
Alcálde con mucha cor- ceived him very courteously,
tesia, y le rogó pagásse a and desired him to pay that
qué'l pobre hombre, que poor man, who had a mind
se quería ir à su tierra. to go away into his own
El procurador se sonrió, country. The procurator
diciendo, v. m. no es nu- smiling, said, Sir, you are
éstro juéz, finó de los se- not our judge, but only for
gláres, si algo debémos à laymen, if we owe that
éssle hombre, pídalо ánte man anything, let him de-
nuéstro juéz, el qual le mand it before our judge,
hará justicia. Con ésto who will do him justice.
se despidió, y pidiéndō su With this he took his leave,
mula, díxo el mozo, que and inquiring for his mule,
un Alguazil se la havia lle- the servant said an Algu-
vado. Bolvió à quexárse zil had carried her away.
al Alcálde, el qual le ref- He went back to complain
póndio: Señor, vuéstra to the Alcalde, who answer-
reverencia no me podrá ed him. Your reverence
negár que la mula es se- cannot deny but that your
glár. Cómo tal la guar- mule is of the laity. As
dó, hásta que pague el such be kept her, till the
procurador al criado. procurator paid the ser-
vant.

D. 2. Buena gracia tu- 2 L. Indeed the Alcalde
vo por cierto el Alcálde. was very pleasant. All judges
Tales debíeran de ser tó- ought to be like him, for the
dos los juéces, para alí- benefit of those who cannot
vio de los que no le hal- be otherwise relieved. And
lán por otra manéra. Y since we are upon judgments,
pués va de sentencias, vá- take this also. There was
ya tambien esta. Trahían a controversy in an univer-
pleyto.

pleito en una universidá sity, about precedency before quién iría delante, tween the doctos of law, los doctores jústas, y los and the doctos of physick. de medicina. Preguntó el The judge asked the parties, juéz à las pártos; Quán- When a man is carried to do llévan algúno à justi- execution for being a thief, ciár por ladrón, qual va which goes foremost, the delante, el que ajustician, criminal, or the executio- o el verdugo? Respondi- ner? They answered, the éron, el que ajustician va criminal goes before. If it delante. Si así es, díxo is so, said the judge, let the el juéz, vayan delante los lawyers go foremost as juristas cómo ladrónes, y thieves, and let the physi- sigan los médicos cómo cians follow them as exe- verdugos. cutioners.

Cab. 2. Ya que hémos 2 G. Since we are fal- dado con los médicos, len upon physicians, I will daré yó mi badajáda. En let my clapper go. At pope la mésa del pápa Alexán- Alexander the vith's table dro vi. se disputába un it was argued one day, día, si éra provechoso que whether it were advanta- huviéssse en la republiça gious to the public to have médicos? La mayor parte physicians. The majority tóvo que no; y alegaron affirmed it was not, and en su razón, que Róma e- alledged to make good their stuvo 600 años sin ellos. assertion, that Rome sub- Díxo el papa, que el no fisted 600 years without éra de aquel parecer; por- item. The pope said he qué à faltár éllos, crece- was not of that opinion; be- ría tanto la multitud de cause if there were none of los hombres, que no ca- them, the multitude of men brían en el mundo. would increase so much, that the world could not contain them.

D. r. No digámos mal 1 L. Let us not speak ill de los médicos, pués en of physicians, since when teniendo necessidá los ha- we shall be in want, we yémos de llamár aunque must send for them, though nos

nos pése, y éllas à véces ever so much against our
nos hácen mal porqué as- wills, and they sometimes
sí lo queremos, cómo le do us harm because we will
pudo suceder à un hóm- have it so, as might hap-
bre muí rico, que havi- pen to a very rich man.
éndose hallado algo in- who having found himself
dispuesto la noche antes, somewhat indisposed the
embió à llamar un médi- night before, he had a phy-
co ; el qual venido, havi- sician called ; who being
éndole tomado el púlsø, come, and having felt his
preguntó, si comía bién ? pulse, asked, whether he
Respondió, que si. Bol- did eat his meat heartily ?
vió à preguntar el me- He answered he did. The
dico, si dormía bién ? physician asked again, whe-
Respondió, que si. Re- ther he slept well, he answer-
plicó el médico, Pués yó ed he did. The physician
os daré con que se os quí- replied, Then I will give
te todo ésto. you something that shall re-
move all that.

Cab. 1. Buena respuesta; i G. A good answer;
y bien empleado el qui- and it is not done amiss to
tárle la salud à quién no deprive one of his health,
está conténto con ella. A who is not satisfied with it.
unqué no parésca tan a- Though it looks not so exact
justádo en todo, por havér in all points, since it con-
cúra y salud, diré lo que cerns curing, and health:
me ha venido à la cabé- I will tell what is come in-
za. Descalabró uno à su to my head. A man broke
mugér, por cierta terri- his wife's head for her in-
bilidád que en ella havía, tolerable temper, and bad
y curóla con mucha cósta her cured with much cost
y cuidado, tanto que ella and care, in so much, that
decía entre si : Yo estói she said to herself: I am
segúra de aquí adelante no safe enough, that for the
óse mi marido hacérme future, my husband will
mal, por no gastár ótro not dare hurt me, for fear
tanto como ha gastado. of being at so great an ex-
Communicó éste pensami- pence as he has now been.
ento con sus vezinas y no She sold her neighbours
falto

falte quién se lo contásse al what she thought, and some-
marido. Calló el hasta body told her husband. He
que estuvo sána, quándo took no notice till she was
llamando al cirujano ante well, when calling the sur-
élla, y sabido lo que mon- geon before her, and under-
tábä la éura, le dixo. A standing what hee cause came
qui tiene v.m. lo que le to, he said to him, Sir,
débo, y otro tanto pára here is what I owe you,
ótra vez, si se le ofreci- and as much more for ano-
ére que lo haya menester ther time, if my wife shall
mi mugér. happen to have occasion.

D. 2. Tales mugéres 2 L. Such women de-
tal tráto merécen : que a- serve such usage: for though
unqué nō es de hómbres it does not become men of
de porte ponér las manos fashion to strike them, there
en ellas, lenguas hái, y are such tongues and tem-
condiciones que obligan pers as oblige people to do
à lo que no se piensa. Por what they never thought.
estó se dice que el pädre Therefore they say the fa-
da el dote, y Diós la bu- ther gives the portion, and
éna mugér. Pero hái God the good wife. But
hombres tan sufrídos que there are some men so pa-
por todo passan ; tal éra tient, that they bear with
un cornudo, à quién sen- all things, such a one was
tenció la justicia, que le a cuckold, who was adjudg-
azotásse su mugér, y que ed in court to be whipped
si no le diéssse récio le di- by his wife, and in case she
esse à ella el verdugo. El did not strike hard, the ex-
buén hómbre volvió la ecutioner was to strike her.
cabéza, y dixo, Dáme The good man looked about,
récio à mi Catarina, no and said, strike me hard
te den à ti. Catherine, that they may
not strike you.

Cab. 2. No éra tan su- 2 G. A son-in-law was
frido un yerno que rogó not so patient, who desired
à su suégro que castigásse his father-in-law to chastise
su hija, porqué si el la ca- his daughter, because if he
stigába sería muí peór, y did it himself, she would be
el sabía que le hacia traí- worse, and he knew she
cion.

ción. Respondió el sue- was false to him: The fa-
gro, reposáos hijo, que ther-in-law answered, Be
por vida de entrámbos, lo easy, my son, for by both
mismo hizó su madre há- our lives, her mother did
sta que llegó à los sesenta. the same, till she came to
Ella lo perderá, que assí sixty years of age. She
lo hizó ellótra. Por ésto will leave it off, for so the
se dice, que se van al ci- other did. Therefore they
élo los cornudos, por- say cuckolds go to heaven,
qué tanta paciencia no because so much patience
puede quedár sin premio. cannot go unrewarded.

D. 1. Algo grosseros, i L. Begging your par-
con perdón, son estos cu- don, these tales are some-
éntos, y por mudár, ya what coarse, and to change,
que en lo último se habló since in the last there was
de ir al cielo, diré lo que mention of going to heaven,
he oido acerca de irse al I will say what I have
infiérno. A un buén heard about going to hell.
predicadór, porque de- Because a good preacher
cía las verdádes, le dában spoke the naked truth, they
un opispádo en las In- offered him a bishoprick in
dias, en tiempo del Em- the West-Indies, in the
peradór Carlos quinto: days of the Emperor Charles
Propusoselo el secre- the fifth. The Secretary of
tario de estado, y el state proposed it to him,
respondió désta manera. and he answered thus.
Sépa vuéstra señoría, que Your lordship must under-
el oficio de obispo es stand, that the office of a
muy gran trabájo, pára bishop is very troublesome,
quien le ha de servir có- for one that will execute it
mo es obligado; y assí according to his duty? so
conociéndo yo mi flaqué- that I being sensible of my
za de no le podér admi- incapacity to perform it as I
nistrár como débo, créo ought, do think that if I
que puestó en el sería ca- were once settled in it, I
minár al infiérno, pues ir should be in the way to hell,
por las Indias, paréceme and to go by the way of the
gran rodéo.

Cab. 1. Grandéza de ánimo christiano fué no act of generosity not to admit un obispado, cōcept of a bishoprick, a thing harto rara en nuéstras very rare in our days, when días, quándo nras se tra- more pains is taken to get bája por ganár una mitra a mitre, than to gain be- que por ganár el ciélo. Si ven. If it is generosity to es generosidad rehusar lo refuse what we have not in que no se possée, no lo es ménos dár con máno li- give freely, and with a beral y buéna gracia lo good grace that which is que yá es propio. Esta our own already. This vir- virtud estuvo en su punto tue was in much perefection en el Cónde de Uréna. Lle- in the Count de Ureña. gó à el Don Pedro de Guzman, à suplicalle le man- Don Pedro de Guzman dásse dar algun trigo, por- came to desire he would or- qué estaba faltó de pan, der him some corn, because que aquél año se havia co- it was scarce with him, that gido poco. Díxo el Con- year having yielded very lit- de à su secretario le hici- ttle. The Count command- ésse un libramiento pára ed his secretary to write an un mayordomo suyo, de order to one of his stewards mil hanégas de trigo, y for a thousand bushels of miéntas el secretario le wheat, and whilst the se- escribía, quedó hablando cretary was writing, he dis- con Don Pedro. Venido coursed with Don Pedro. el secretario con el libra- When the secretary brought niénto, halló que decía, the order, he found it run, Daréis à Don Pedro mil You shall deliver to Don hanégas de trigo, de que Pedro a thousand bushels of yo le hago mercéd. Ras- wheat, which I favour him gó el libramiento, y con with. He tore the order, algúna cólera díxo al and with some heat said to secretario, No havéis de the secretary, You are notcir, sinó que el Señor Don to say so, but which Don Pedro de Guzmán me hác Pedro de Guzman does me ce mercéd de recibir de me. This is true nobility, mí. Esta es la verdadéra to give as becomes the giver, nobleza,

nobléza, dar conforme à and not to the receiver, and quién da y no à quién re- to save him that ask the cibe, y quitar la verguén- shame by the way of giving. za à quién pide con el modo de dar.

D. qd. Mas gustosa ma- 2 L. The subject we have
téria es la que tenemos én- in hand is more agreeable
tre manos que la passada, than the last, in as much as
cuanto es mas de estimar virtue is more to be valued
la virtud que el vicio. Pá- than vice. To go on with
ra proseguir con ella, al it, an old gentlewoman
Dúque de Alva suplicó ú- prayed the Duke de Alva
na duéña le ayudásse pára to give her something to
casar una hija. El Duque wards marrying off a daughter
le mandó dar veinte du- ter. The Duke ordered her
cados. El camarero à twenty ducats. The gen-
quien lo mandó dióle do- tleman be ordered to do it,
cientos. Al tomárle des- gave her two hundred.
pués la cuénta halló pu- When he came afterwards
éstos docientos ducados to take his accounts, he
en lugar de veinte. Díxole found two hundred ducats
al camarero cómo pusistes set down instead of twenty.
aqui docientos ducados. He said to the gentleman,
no haviendo de ser si no How came you to set down
veinte. El camarero ref- two hundred ducats, where-
pondió. Señor, yó oí as there should be but two
docientos ducados. Re- ty. The gentleman answer-
plicó el Dúque. Bendito ed, my lord, I understood
sea Diós, que te dió me- two hundred. The Duke
jores oídos, que à mi lén- replied, God be praised, for
gua. Y passó en cuénta giving you better ears, than
los docientos ducados. me a tongue. And so he
passed the two hundred du-
cats in the account.

Cab. 2. Bién enmendó 2 G. He made good a-
la falta en el dar con la li- mends for the error in giv-
beralidad de consentir en ing by his liberality in con-
lo dádo. El Conde de fenting to what had been
Feria tenía tanta grandé- given. The Count de Feria

za de animo, que dava à bad such a generous soul, todos quántos le pedia, that he gave to all that Tenía costumbre de dezir asked him. He was wont a su mayordomo, Dad à to say to his steward, Give fulano treinta, o quarénta such a one thirty, or forty escudos, dad à citano ci. crowns, give such another en escudos, o ciento y an hundred, or an hundred cinquenta, de manera que and fifty, so that be never nunca decia cosa señalada. said any thing certain. The El mayordomo le dixo, steward said to him, when de que v^a. s^a. manda dar algo, dice treinte o quarénta, y assí de otros numeros, con que quedo consuso, sin sabér à que me atenga. Respondió el Conde; Por tu vida te atén siempre à lo mas, no mudes mi condición.

knowing which to lay bold of. The Count answered, I desire you will always hold to the most, do not stint my nature.

D. 1. Cessen un rato las pláticas, y sirvánselos v^a. m^s. de tomar algún refresco, o colación. Aquí hái chocolate, téa, dulces, y un trago de vino, para que escója cada qual lo que mas le agradare; que ésto de hablar, sino es trabájo, gasta el alienito, y es menester dar algún alivio al estómago, que son muchas las horas entre la comida y la cena.

I L. Let us for a while cease this discourse, and be pleased to take some refreshment, or collation. Here is chocolate, tea, sweet-meats, and a glass of wine, that every one may choose what he likes best; for talking, though it be no labour, spends the breath, and it is convenient to give some support to the stomach, for there are many hours between dinner and supper.

Coloquios Espanóles è Ingleses.
Spanish and English Colloquies.

Colóquio sexto. COLLOQUY VI.

Entre dos Capitánes, y dos Cortesanos. Between two Captains and two Courtiers.

1 Cap. Bien encuen- 1 Cap. WELL met,
Btro, Señores, Gentlemen,
 dos à dos; conque está- two and two; so that we
 mos iguales, no nos lle- are equal, we shall have
 varémos ventaja en la superiority in conversation;
 Conversación; y si huvi- and if we should happen to
 éremos de reñir, à pares fall out, we are ready pair-
 venímos. edg

1 Cor. A esa cuenta, 2 Cour. After that rate,
 mas vale no estar tan iguales; it is better not to be so equal,
 les, que en términos de than just fitted to make
 armárs pendéncias. quarrels.

2 Cap. Bién dice v. 2 Cap. You are in the
 m^d. que acá éntre Amigos right, Sir, for bere among
 sólo seha de tratár de friends we must only talk of
 Paz; la Guerra há de ser peace; War must be with
 con los enemigos del the King's enemies.
 Rey.

2 Cor. Y ésta para v. 2 Cour. And that is for
 m^m. que han tomado por you, Gentleman, who have
 esse camino; que nosotros taken to that way; for we
 mos muy bien nos hallá- are very well satisfied with
 mos con la quietud de la the repose of the Court.
 Corte.

1 Cap. A nosotros nos 1 Cap. This has fallen
 há cabido esto en parte, to our lot, and the other to
 y à